

PC 1109

.B7

Copy 1



Class PC 1109

Book B7







A

GRAMMAR

OF THE

ITALIAN LANGUAGE

COMPILED BY THE

REV^D. DON A. BOSCHI.

FOURTH EDITION.

FLORENCE

AT THE AUTHOR'S Casino dei Nobili, and AT MOLINI'S LIBRARY Archibusieri St.

ROME

AT PIALE'S LIBRARY
Piazza di Spagna.

NAPLES

AT DETKEN'S LIBRARY
Portico di S. Francesco di Paola.

A Key to this Grammar is also published.

1850.

PC 1109
B7

Dr B. Fay Effner
Mar 14, 1896

TO THE
RIGHT HON. LORD FARNHAM

&c. &c. &c.

My Lord

The grateful remembrance of your generous patronage imposes on me the pleasing duty of offering for your perusal this new edition of my Italian grammar, and encourages me to hope the improvements therein may not be unworthy of your notice.

Should it be honoured with your Lordship's kind approbation, I shall regard it as a pledge of the success that has attended my former efforts.

I have the honour to be

Your Lordship's

Most Obedient Humble Servant
Don ANTONIO BOSCHI.

Florence. March 1, 1850.



TO THE
R E A D E R.

Every one about to publish a book, is accustomed to commence with a preface, in which he chiefly recommends it, if not for its originality, at least for its order and clearness, in preference to other works of the same kind. Should I do so? It would be contrary to my opinion. Whatever may be the merits of my book, I leave them to the decision of those for whose use I have written it. To recommend it would be of no avail, if it had no merit; and on the contrary a pompous preface would not add to the value of the work.

I beg to assure my English Readers that, whatever judgment they may pass upon my treatise, my only aim has been to assist them in overcoming the difficulties of one of the richest and most copious languages, the language of poetry and song; and also to endeavour to facilitate its acquisition at the least expense of time and labour. An impartial Public will judge whether I have attained my end or not.

In the mean time I feel assured that my motive in writing this work will be approved of, and my intention at least will be considered laudable. This alone is sufficient for me, and therefore I feel amply rewarded for my time and trouble.

ITALIAN ALPHABET

AND

PRONUNCIATION.

			Exempl.	Meaning.
A	as heard in	Father, Bath	<i>Mano</i>	Hand.
B	»	Bell, Bit	<i>Bello</i>	Beautiful.
C (1)	»	Chain, Church	<i>Cena</i>	Supper.
D	»	Dare, Din	<i>Destino</i>	Fate
E	is open and close.			
Open	»	Let, Fair	<i>Pesca</i>	Peach.
Close	»	Pain, Feint	<i>Legge</i>	Law.
F	»	Effeminate	<i>Infermo</i>	Sick.
G (2)	»	Gem, Gin	<i>Gente</i>	People.
H (3)				
I	»	See, Me	<i>Vino</i>	Wine.

(1) *C* before *a, o, u* or a consonant sounds like the *k* in *kin*: as, *cavo*, dear; *colore*, colour; *cura*, care; *Cristo*, Christ. Before *e* and *i* it retakes its primitive sound of *ch*.

When it is preceded by *s* and followed by *e* or *i*, it sounds like *sh* in *dish*: as, *pesce*, a fish; *ambascia*, shortness of breath. But when followed by *a, o, u* or a consonant, it retakes the sound of *k*: as, *esca*, bait; *nasco*, I am born; *scure*, an ax; *ascribo*, I ascribe.

(2) *G* before the vowels *a, o, u* or a consonant is pronounced as in English in the same combination of letters: as, *gamba*, a leg; *gola*, throat; *gusto*, taste; *gloria*, glory. Before *e* and *i* it retakes the usual sound of *g* in *gem*.

(3) *H* has no sound in the Italian language. It is found before four persons of the present Indicative of the Verb *Avere*, To have, viz. *ho*, I have; *hai*, thou hast; *ha*, he has; *hanno*, they have, which serves only to make them pronounced with a grave accent. In the Interjections *ah! oh! eh!* it gives the vowel a protracted sound. When it is placed between the *c-e, c-i, or g-e, g-i* it has a hard sound, as in *barche*, boats; *pochi*, few; *piaghe*, wounds; *preghi*, prayers.

			Exampl.	Meaning.
J	as y is heard in	Yell	<i>Aiuto</i>	Assistance.
L	»	Elephant	<i>Ellesponto</i>	Hellespont.
M	»	Emblem	<i>Eminente</i>	Eminent.
N	»	Entry	<i>Entrare</i>	To enter.
O	is open and close.			
	Open	» Blot, Stop	<i>Sodo</i>	Solid.
	Close	» Stone, Note	<i>Tomba</i>	A tomb.
P	»	Pedlar	<i>Perire</i>	To perish.
Q	before <i>ua</i>	» Quadrant	<i>Quadro</i>	A picture.
	before <i>ue</i> , <i>ui</i> .	» Quell, Quill	<i>Quello</i>	That.
R	»	Erect	<i>Ergere</i>	To erect.
S	»	Essence	<i>Essere</i>	To be.
T	»	Tell	<i>Natio</i>	Native.
U	»	Fool	<i>Fune</i>	A rope.
V	»	Vain	<i>Velo</i>	A veil.
Z	»	Chintz	<i>Zelo</i>	Zeal.

LESSON I.

PARTS OF SPEECH.

The parts of speech are eight, viz.

Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle, *declinable*; Adverb, Preposition, Conjunction, Interjection, *indeclinable*.

A Noun is the name of whatsoever thing or being we discourse of.

Nouns are divided into Nouns substantive and Nouns adjective.

NOUNS SUBSTANTIVE.

Are of two sorts, proper and common. The former are the names of persons and places: as, *Guglielmo*, William; *Inghilterra*, England. The latter are the names of kinds or species: as, *uomo*, man; *animale*, animal.

GENDERS.

There are only two genders in Italian; masculine and feminine. It is very difficult for the grammarian to lay down precise rules for determining the genders of nouns in Italian. The following general rules will be found sufficient.

The final vowel determines the genders of nouns.

Nouns in *a* are of the feminine gender: as, *scatola*, a box. Except names, vocations and titles of men: as, *Andrea*, Andrew; *poeta*, a poet; *Duca*, a Duke, and some nouns derived from the Greek: as,

<i>Anagramma</i>	Anagram.	<i>Idioma</i>	Idiom.
<i>Anatema</i>	Anathema.	<i>Pianeta</i>	Planet.
<i>Assioma</i>	Axiom.	<i>Poema</i>	Poem.
<i>Clima</i>	Climate.	<i>Problema</i>	Problem.
<i>Diadema</i>	Diadem.	<i>Proclama</i>	Proclamation.
<i>Dilemma</i>	Dilemma.	<i>Programma</i>	Prospectus.
<i>Diploma</i>	Diploma.	<i>Scisma</i>	Schism.
<i>Dogma</i>	Dogma.	<i>Sistema</i>	System.
<i>Emblema</i>	Emblem.	<i>Sofisma</i>	Sophism.
<i>Enigma</i>	Enigma.	<i>Stemma</i>	Coat of arms.
<i>Epigramma</i>	Epigram.	<i>Strattagemma</i>	Stratagem.
<i>Fantasma</i>	Phantom.	<i>Tema</i>	Theme.

Some few nouns vary their gender as they vary their meanings.

Dramma. .	{	<i>Drama</i> , is masculine.
	{	<i>Dram-weight</i> , is feminine.
Tema. . . .	{	<i>Theme</i> , is masculine.
	{	<i>Fear</i> , is feminine.
Margine. .	{	<i>Cuticle of a wound</i> , is feminine.
	{	<i>Brink, or margin</i> , is masculine.
Oste.	{	<i>Innkeeper</i> , is masculine.
	{	<i>Army</i> , is feminine.

The names of cities, towns, and provinces ending in *a* are feminine: as, *Roma*, Rome; *Siena*, Sienna, etc. If they have any other termination, they are of both genders: as, *Il brillante Parigi*, or *la brillante Parigi*, Delightful Paris — *Il bel Firenze*, or *la bella Firenze*, Fair Florence.

All names of empires, kingdoms, provinces and rivers are feminine, when they terminate in *a*: as, *La Russia*, Russia; *la Lombardia*, Lombardy; *la Germania*, Germany etc. and masculine, if they end in any other vowel: as, *Il Portogallo*, Portugal; *il Tamigi*, the Thames; *il Piemonte*, Piedmont etc.

Nouns in *e* are some masculine and some feminine.

Nouns in *me* are masculine: as, *costume*, custom: except *fame*, hunger; *speme*, hope.

Nouns in *re* are masculine: as, *timore*, fear: except *febbre*, fever; *coltre*, coverlet; *polvere*, dust; *scure*, ax; *torre*, tower, which are feminine. Also *arbore*, tree; *aere*, air; *folgore*, thunderbolt; *lepre*, hare; *cenere*, ashes; *carcere*, prison, which are common to both genders.

Nouns in *nte* are masculine: as, *monte*, mountain; except *mente*, the mind; *corrente*, current; *sorgente*, source; *gente*, people (feminine); *fronte*, forehead; *fonte*, fountain, (common.)

Fine, end; *trave*, a beam, are common.

Nouns in *i* are feminine: as, *metropoli*, metropolis; except *barbagianni*, owl; *brindisi*, toast (in drinking); *Tamigi*, Thames; *dì*, day, and its compounds; *eclissi*, eclipse; and numerals ending in *i*: as, *dieci*, ten; *quindici*, fifteen etc.

Genesi, genesis, is of both genders.

Nouns in *o* are masculine, except *mano*, a hand, and names and titles of women: as, *Saffo*, Sapho.

Names of trees end mostly in *o* of the masculine

gender, whilst the fruit ends in *a* of the feminine: as, *pero*, the pear-tree; *pera*, the pear. The following nouns however mean the tree and the fruit: viz. *fico*, *pomo*, *arancio*, *cedro*, the fig, the apple, the orange, the cedar. *Noce*, the walnut-tree is masculine; *noce*, a walnut is feminine.

Nouns in *u* are feminine: as, *gioventù*, youth; except *Perù*.

NUMBER.

Nouns have two numbers: the singular and the plural. The singular speaks of one object: as, *padre*, father; the plural of more than one: as, *padri*, fathers.

The general rules for the formation of the plural are the following.

All nouns masculine in *a* change the *a* into *i*: as, *poeta*, a poet; *poeti*, poets; *profeta*, a prophet; *profeti*, prophets.

All nouns feminine in *a* form their plural in *e*: as, *regina*, queen; *regine*, queens; *foresta*, a forest; *foreste*, forests.

Nouns ending in *ca* and *ga*, of whatsoever gender, require an *h* in the plural before the final vowel: as, *monarca*, monarch; *monarchi*, monarchs; *lega*, a league; *leghe*, leagues.

Nouns in *cia* and *gia*, without accent on the *i*, change the *ia* into *e*: as, *minaccia*, threat; *minacce*, threats; *spiaggia*, shore; *spiagge*, shores. When the *i* is accented they follow the general rules: as, *magia*, incantation; *magie*, incantations.

All nouns ending in *e* and *o*, of whatsoever gender, form their plurals in *i*: as, *principe*, prince; *principi*, princes; *lezione*, lesson; *lezioni*, lessons; *cavallo*, horse; *cavalli*, horses; *mano*, hand; *mani*, hands—Those in *ie* have no variation in their plurals: as, *specie*, species;

requie, rest; *superficie*, surface; *barbarie*, cruelty; *progenie*, progeny; *serie*, series; *effigie*, effigy.

Nouns ending in *ajo* and *ojo* form their plural either by suppressing the final *o*, or in *ai* and *oi*: as, *calamajo*, inkstand; *calamaj* or *calamai*, inkstands; *vassejo*, salver; *vassoj* or *vassoi*, salvers.

Uomo, man; *moglie*, wife; *bue*, an ox; *mille*, thousand, make *uomini*, *mogli*, *buoi*, *mila*.

Nouns in *io* long, make *ii*: as, *mormorio*, murmur; *mormorii*, murmurs. In *io* short, they make *ii* or *j*: as, *tempio*, temple; *tempii* or *tempj*, temples.

Dio, God, makes *Dei*, Gods, but in poetry *Dii* is also used for the plural.

Nouns ending in *cio*, *chio*, *gio*, *glio*; form their plural by suppressing the final *o*: as, *cacio*, cheese; *caci*, cheeses; *ciliegio*, cherry-tree; *ciliegi*, cherry-trees; *occhio*, eye; *occhi*, eyes; *figlio*, son; *figli*, sons.

Nouns in *co* and *go*, of two syllables, make their plurals in *chi* and *ghi*: as, *luogo*, place; *luoghi*, places; *fico*, fig; *fichi*, figs; except *porco*, pig; *greco*, greek, which make *porci*, *greci*. When they consist of more than two syllables, and when the *co* and *go* are immediately preceded by a vowel, they take no *h*: as, *amico*, friend; *amici*, friends.

The following, however, are exceptions, admitting the *h* in the formation of their plural.

<i>Antico</i>	ancient.	<i>Dialogo</i>	dialogue.
<i>Aprico</i>	sunny.	<i>Dimentico</i>	forgetful.
<i>Beccafico</i>	becafico.	<i>Fondaco</i>	warehouse.
<i>Carico</i>	load.	<i>Impiego</i>	employment.
<i>Caduco</i>	perishable.	<i>Intrigo</i>	intrigue.
<i>Castigo</i>	punishment.	<i>Manico</i>	handle.
<i>Catalogo</i>	catalogue.	<i>Obbligo</i>	obligation.

<i>Opaco</i>	opaque.	<i>Ripiego</i>	expedient.
<i>Parroco</i>	curate.	<i>Sacrilego</i>	sacrilegious.
<i>Presago</i>	predicter.	<i>Salvatico</i>	wild.
<i>Prodigo</i>	prodigal.	<i>Scarico</i>	unloading.
<i>Prologo</i>	prologue.	<i>Traffico</i>	traffic.
<i>Pudico</i>	chaste.	<i>Ubrico</i>	drunk.
<i>Rammarico</i>	sorrow.		

When they are preceded by another consonant they make their plurals in *chi* and *ghi*: as, *bifolco*, ploughman; *bifolchi*, ploughmen; *albergo*, inn; *alberghi*, inns.

Some may be written indifferently with or without *h* in their plural: as, *astrologo*, astrologer; *astrologi* or *astrologhi*, astrologers; *analogo*, analogous; *analogi*, or *analoghi*; *Dialogo*, dialogue; *dialogi* or *dialoghi*, dialogues; *mendico*, mendicant; *mendici*, or *mendichi*, mendicants.

Some words have two terminations in the singular: as, *cavaliere* or *cavaliero*, a knight; *barbiere* or *barbiero*, a barber; *straniere* or *straniero*, a stranger; *sentiere* or *sentiero*, a path.

The following is a list of those nouns in *o* which form their plural in *a*, and are masculine in the singular and feminine in the plural.

<i>Centinaio</i>	a hundred	<i>centinaia</i>	hundreds.
<i>Migliaio</i>	a thousand	<i>migliaia</i>	thousands.
<i>Miglio</i>	mile	<i>miglia</i>	miles.
<i>Moggio</i>	a measure for corn	<i>moggia</i>	—
<i>Stajo</i>	bushel	<i>staia</i>	bushels.
<i>Paio</i>	pair	<i>paia</i>	pairs.
<i>Uovo</i>	egg	<i>uova</i>	eggs.

Others also in *o* form their plurals both in *i* and *a*, the former are masculine, and the latter feminine.

<i>Anello</i>	ring	<i>anelli</i>	and <i>anella</i> .
<i>Braccio</i>	arm	<i>bracci</i>	» <i>braccia</i> .

<i>Budello</i>	bowel	<i>budelli</i>	and <i>budella</i> .
<i>Calcagno</i>	heel	<i>calcagni</i>	» <i>calcagna</i> .
<i>Carro</i>	cart	<i>carri</i>	» <i>carra</i> .
<i>Castello</i>	castle	<i>castelli</i>	» <i>castella</i> .
<i>Ciglio</i>	eyebrow	<i>cigli</i>	» <i>ciglia</i> .
<i>Corno</i>	horn	<i>corni</i>	» <i>corna</i> .
<i>Dito</i>	finger	<i>diti</i>	» <i>dita</i> .
<i>Filo</i>	thread	<i>fili</i>	» <i>fila</i> .
<i>Fondamento</i>	foundation	<i>fondamenti</i>	» <i>fondamenta</i> .
<i>Frutto</i>	fruit	<i>frutti</i>	» <i>frutta</i> .
<i>Fuso</i>	spindle	<i>fusi</i>	» <i>fusa</i> .
<i>Gesto</i>	deed	<i>gesti</i>	» <i>gesta</i> .
<i>Ginocchio</i>	knee	<i>ginocchi</i>	» <i>ginocchia</i> .
<i>Grido</i>	cry	<i>gridi</i>	» <i>grida</i> .
<i>Labbro</i>	lip	<i>labbri</i>	» <i>labbra</i> .
<i>Lenzuolo</i>	sheet	<i>lenzuoli</i>	» <i>lenzuola</i> .
<i>Membro</i>	limb	<i>membri</i>	» <i>membra</i> .
<i>Muro</i>	wall	<i>muri</i>	» <i>mura</i> .
<i>Osso</i>	bone	<i>ossi</i>	» <i>ossa</i> .
<i>Quadrello</i>	dart	<i>quadrelli</i>	» <i>quadrella</i> .
<i>Riso</i>	laugh	<i>risi</i>	» <i>risa</i> .
<i>Sacco</i>	bag	<i>sacchi</i>	» <i>sacca</i> .
<i>Vestigio</i>	vestige	<i>vestigì</i>	» <i>vestigia</i> .
<i>Vestimento</i>	raiment	<i>vestimenti</i>	» <i>vestimenta</i> .

Monosyllables remain unchanged in the plural; as, *gru*, a crane; *re*, a king, likewise all nouns accented on the last vowel: as, *tribù*, tribe; *castità*, chastity, and all nouns in *i*: as, *eclissi*, ecclipse; *tesi*, a theme.

Some nouns are used only in the plural: as, *annali*, annals; *calzoni*, trowsers; *esequie*, funeral rites; *fasti*, deeds; *forbici*, scissors; *lari*, lares; *nozze*, wedding; *rostri*, beaks; *spezie*, drugs; *vanni*, (poet. for *ali*) wings.

LESSON II.

ARTICLE.

The article is a word placed before a noun to show how far its signification extends.

DEFINITE ARTICLE.

The definite article *the* is expressed by *il*, *lo*, *la*, which are declined as follows.

Singular	{	Nominative	il	lo	la	<i>The.</i>
		Genitive	del	dello	della	<i>Of the.</i>
		Dative	al	allo	alla	<i>To the.</i>
		Accusative	il	lo	la	<i>The.</i>
		Ablative	dal	dallo	dalla	<i>From the.</i>
Plural	{	Nominative	i	gli	le	<i>The.</i>
		Genitive	dei or de'	degli	delle	<i>Of the.</i>
		Dative	ai or a'	agli	alle	<i>To the.</i>
		Accusative	i	gli	le	<i>The.</i>
		Ablative	dai or da'	dagli	dalle	<i>From the.</i>

Il is placed before a masculine noun beginning with a simple consonant; as, *Il padre*, The father; *I padri*, The fathers — *Il maestro*, The master; *I maestri*, The masters.

Lo is prefixed 1. To nouns of the masculine gender beginning with an *s* united with another consonant, which is called in Italian *s impura*: as, *Lo studio*, The study; *Gli studii*, The studies — 2. To nouns beginning with a *z*: as, *Lo zio*, The uncle; *Gli zii*, The uncles — 3. To nouns beginning with a vowel, in which case it suffers an elision of the *o* in the singular, but never

in the plural, except before an *i*: as, *L'amore*, The love; *Gli amori*, The loves—*L'idolo*, The idol; *Gli idoli*, The idols.

Dei, Gods is an exception and takes *gli* in the plural: as, *Gli Dei*, *degli Dei*, etc.

La is prefixed to feminine nouns: as, *La stella*, The star. This article is contracted or not in the singular before a vowel, but always before an *a*, and in the plural before an *e* only: as, *La industria* or *l'industria*, The industry—*L'amica*, The friend; *Le amiche*, The friends—*L'epoche*, The epochs.

The prepositions *Con*, With—*In*, In—*Per*, For—*Su*, Upon, when followed by the article, are joined in the following way.

	If with the article		If with the article		If with the article	
	Il		Lo		La	
With the is express- ed by.	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
	Col	Coi or Co'	Collo	Cogli	Colla	Colle
			or		or	
			Con lo	Con gli	Con la	Con le
<i>In the.</i> . .	Nel	NeiorNe'	Nello	Negli	Nella	Nelle
<i>For the.</i> . .	Pel	PeiorPe'	Per lo	Per gli	Per la	Per le
<i>On the.</i> . .	Sul	Sui or Su'	Sullo	Sugli	Sulla	Sulle

EXAMPLES.

With the book, *Col libro* — With the noise, *Collo strepito* — With the box, *Colla scatola*.

In the field, *Nel campo* — In the study, *Nello studio* — In the room, *Nella camera*.

For the favour, *Pel favore* — For the mistake, *Per lo sbaglio* — For the glory, *Per la gloria*.

On the carpet, *Sul tappeto* — On the rock, *Sullo scoglio* — On the table, *Sulla tavola*.

The prepositions *Di*, *A*, *Da* correspond with the English prepositions *Of*, *To*, *From*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Di Londra</i>	Of London	} Before a vowel <i>di</i> suffers an elision : as, <i>D'Andrea</i> , Of Andrew — <i>A</i> becomes <i>ad</i> : as, <i>Ad Andrea</i> , To Andrew, and <i>da</i> remains to distinguish the Ablative from the Genitive: as, <i>Da Andrea</i> , From Andrew.
<i>A Londra</i>	To London	
<i>Da Londra</i>	From London	

The definite article in Italian is employed both in a general and individual sense: as, *I Re sono di raro felici*, Kings are seldom happy — *Ecco l'uomo che tanto vi piace*, Here is the man whom you like so much.

When, however, we ascribe the possession of *virtues* or *vices* or *characteristic qualities* to particular persons or things, we must omit the article: as, John has *courage*, but not *discretion*, *Giovanni ha coraggio, ma non discrezione*.

Names of countries, empires, kingdoms, provinces, rivers etc. taken in their full extent, require the definite article: as, *Egli ha scorso l'Italia, la Francia e l'Inghilterra*, He travelled over Italy, France and England. But when a personal title precedes, the simple preposition is used: as, *La regina d'Inghilterra*, The Queen of England — *Il Granduca di Toscana*, The Grand Duke of Tuscany.

The definite article is suppressed before names of persons, of towns, and also of countries not taken in their full extent: as, *Ecco Antonio*, Here is Anthony — *Andremo oggi a Firenze*, We will go to-day to Florence — *Egli viene d'Italia di Francia e d'Inghilterra*, He comes from Italy, France, and England — *Ella nacque*

in *Germania*, She was born in Germany. But when an adjective or the words *Signore*, Mr. *Signora*, Mrs. *Signorina*, Miss, intervene, the definite article is expressed: as, *Ecco il Signor Antonio*, Here is Mr. Anthony — *Andremo oggi alla bella Firenze*, We will go to-day to fair Florence — *Ho veduto la Signorina Wells*, I have seen Miss Wells — *Il vostro amico nacque nella florida Spagna*, Your friend was born in flourishing Spain.

It is prefixed to family names: as, *Il Petrarca*, Petrarch—*Il Tasso*, Tasso etc. and to personal titles followed by proper names: as, *La Regina Vittoria*, Queen Victoria—*Il generale Wellington*, General Wellington. But when the proper name precedes the title, and is followed by the country, the article is omitted: as, Victoria Queen of England, *Vittoria Regina d'Inghilterra*.

The definite article is sometimes placed between the noun and adjective, as may be often seen in Boccaccio: as, *Ginevra la bella*, The beautiful Ginevra etc.

It is also placed before an adjective used substantively: as, *Il grande*, The great—*Il sublime*, The sublime—*L'utile*, The useful etc.

The Infinitives of Verbs used instead of nouns are preceded by the masculine article: as, *Il mangiare*, To eat—*Lo studiare*, To study—*L'ascoltare*, To listen: Ex. *Essa vedendo che il pregare non le valeva, ricorse al minacciare*, Seeing that *her entreaties* were of no avail, she had recourse to threats.

The same rule applies to adverbs instead of nouns: as, *Il dove*, *il come*, *il quando*, *il sì*, *il no*, *il mai*, *il perchè* (The) where, (the) how, (the) when, (the) yes, (the) no, (the) never, (the) why.

EXAMPLES.

Io sarei contento di sapere il I should be glad to know
quando. when.

Il perchè vi dirò. I will tell you why.

Ella era certa del sì. She was sure of a yes.

We Italians make use of the definite article before the words *morning, evening, day, night*, and before the different days of the week, whilst the English make use of a preposition: as, They sit up *at* night and sleep *in* the day, *Vegliano la notte e dormono il giorno* — Galignani's Messenger is not published *on a* Sunday, *Il Messaggero del Galignani non si pubblica la Domenica*.

When there are several nouns of different genders and numbers, each one must have its separate article: as, *Il padre ed i figli*, The father and sons—*Collo studio e colla fatica*, With study and fatigue. If they are of the same gender and number, it is sufficient to use the article before the first noun, although more elegant to repeat it: as, *Le valli, le colline, e le pianure* instead of *Le valli, colline e pianure*, Vallies, mountains and plains.

When a word is composed of two nouns, one of which is used adjectively denoting *use*, the first in English is placed the last in Italian, governed by *da*: as, A bed-room, *Una camera da letto*—A wine-bottle, *Unu bottiglia da vino*. When they are used to express *matter, quality or country*, they employ *di*: as, A gold-ring, *Un anello d'oro*—Madeira-wine, *Vino di Madera*. When they describe a thing according to its *form or shape*, they take *a*: as, A cylinder-watch, *Un oriuolo a cilindro*.

The definite article is usually suppressed when the sense of a noun conveys an absolute unlimited meaning: as, *Onore e virtù debbono essere la guida de' generosi*,

Honour and virtue ought to be the guides of the generous. This, however, is not to be followed as a general rule.

The placed before a noun in apposition is suppressed in Italian: as, Mr. Macalister *the* son in law of Mrs. Fleming, *Il signor Macalister genero della signora Fleming.*

PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

Del, dello, della: dei, degli, delle, Some, any, mean a portion of a thing: as, *Datemi dell' acqua,* Give me some water — *Volete della carta?* Do you want any paper? — *Prendete dei fagiolini e del manzo,* Take some beans and some beef.

When *some* stands substantively for *some people*, or is employed adjectively, it must be expressed by *alcuno, alcuna: alcuni, alcune.*

EXAMPLES.

As <i>some</i> (people) say.	<i>Come</i> alcuni dicono.
After <i>some</i> heavy sighs she said.	<i>Dopo</i> alcun caldo sospiro ella disse.
Peter brought me <i>some</i> things.	<i>Pietro</i> mi portò alcune cose.

INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

The indefinite article *uno, un, una, un'*, a or an, is used in the following way.

Uno before a noun masculine beginning with an *s impura* or a *z*: as, *Uno specchio,* A looking-glass — *Uno zelo,* A zeal.

Un before a noun of the same gender beginning with

a vowel or a simple consonant: as, *Un amico*, A friend — *Un castello*, A castle.

Una before a noun feminine beginning with a consonant: as, *Una sorella*, A sister.

Un' with an apostrophe before a noun of the same gender beginning with a vowel: as, *Un' amica*, A friend.

The masculine indefinite article *uno* or *un* is found before Infinitives taken substantively, in the same manner as we employ the definite article: as, *Un mormorar di frondi*, A murmur of leaves — *Uno strepitar d'armati*, A noise of armed men.

The English make use of *a* or *an* before nouns of measure and weight, but we use the definite article *il*, *lo*, *la*: as, He sells wine for two pauls *a* bottle, *Egli vende il vino due paoli la bottiglia* — I have bought corn for six pauls *a* bushel, *Ho comprato il grano a sei paoli lo staio*.

When speaking of time, *a* or *an* is expressed in Italian either by *per*, or by the definite article *il*, *lo*, *la*: as, So much *a* week, *Tanto per settimana*, or *Tanto la settimana*.

The indefinite article is suppressed in Italian.

1. After the verbs *To be*, *To become*, with a noun expressing the country, profession or dignity: as, He is *an* Irishman, *Egli è Irlandese* — You will be *a* lawyer, *Voi sarete avvocato* — You will become *a* minister of State, *Diverrete Ministro di Stato*.

2. With a noun of the same kind after the verbs, *To make*, *create*, *appoint*, *elect*, *choose*, *declare*, *proclaim*, whatever may be the Nominative of that verb: as, The king made him *a* General, *Il re lo fece Generale* — They elected him *a* member of Parliament, *Lo elessero membro del Parlamento*.

a cruel despot — I left Mrs. Williams in France, and from
despota lasciai — di
^{2 1 3}
 thence she will soon sail for America — The father, mother,
là farà vela —
 sisters, uncles, aunts and several other relations were there
parecchi altri parente erano là
 — I perceived in her virtue, but not patience — Miss Lyte
scorsi lei —
^{2 1}
 always takes coffee in the morning and tea at night — Lord
prende tè —
 B. the son of the Marquis of Hastings was here (this
— Marchese — era qui
^{2 1}
 morning); perhaps the Queen (will make) him a privy
stamane farà lo
 counsellor, but I do not know when — What a beautiful
= non so bella
^{2 1}
 morning! — Mr. Croser brought me a snuff-box and some
— portò mi tabacco
^{3 4}
 silver-spoons from London — It is always better to speak
cucchiaino = parlare
 little than to speak too much — (Here is) the horse which
che troppo Ecco cui
 Mr. Rogers has just brought from Paris — Dante pleases
— ha testè condotto —
^{2 3 1}
 Miss Hoppner very much, she starts to-morrow for gay
(Dat.) — assai parte allegro
 Naples. Is she an Irish Lady? No, she is an English Lady —
ella = — =
 Italy is the land of the fine arts — Mr. Hindley goes to Ire-
terra belle va in
^{2 1}
 land four or five times a year — Peter gives him seven
volta dà gli

pauls a day — He sells this lace at half a guinea an ell^{2 1}
questa trina mezzo ghinea auna
— The lily is the emblem of candour, innocence and purity.
giglio simbolo

LESSON III.

ADJECTIVE.

A noun adjective requires to be joined with the substantive of which it shows the *nature* or the *quality*, and it agrees with it in gender and number.

Adjectives end either in *o* or *e*. Those in *o* change the *o* into *a* for the feminine: as, *Uomo savio*, A wise man — *Donna savia*, A wise woman. Those in *e* are of both genders: as, *Uomo prudente*, A prudent man — *Donna prudente*, A prudent woman — In the plural they follow the rules of nouns substantive.

No precise rules can be given to determine the situation of the adjective, whether it should be placed before or after the substantive. The study of the Classics is the only means by which accuracy can be obtained on this point. We, however, generally place all adjectives after the substantives, which express *colour, shape, taste*, and those used in speaking of the state of the *air* or *weather*.

EXAMPLES.

Green velvet
A round table
A sweet orange
A damp climate

Velluto verde.
Tavola rotonda.
Un'arancia dolce.
Un clima umido.

Particular attention therefore must be given to the position of some adjectives, as if not, their meaning would be totally different.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Un galant' uomo</i>	<i>means</i>	An honest man.
<i>Un uomo galante</i>	»	A gallant.
<i>Un gentil uomo</i>	»	A Gentleman.
<i>Un uomo gentile</i>	»	A man of genteel manners.
<i>Un pover uomo</i>	»	An insignificant man.
<i>Un uomo povero</i>	»	A man in distress.
<i>Una certa cosa</i>	»	A certain affair.
<i>Una cosa certa</i>	»	A sure thing.

When an adjective has reference to several substantives of the same gender, and is detached from them by a verb, it must be put in the plural and agree with them in gender: as, *Il re ed il pastore sono eguali dopo la morte*, The king and the shepherd are equal after death.

If however the adjective relates to several substantives of different genders, it is always put in the masculine gender and in the plural: as, *I fratelli, e le sorelle furono gioiosi all'arrivo dello zio*, The brothers and sisters were overjoyed at the arrival of the uncle.

But in the absence of a verb, it agrees with the last substantive: as, *Il tempo e la stagione grata*, The agreeable time and season.

EXERCISE 2. ⁽¹⁾

An ingenuous candour, an amiable simplicity and a
ingenuo

(1) The pupil must put the adjectives in their right genders and numbers, as the singular masculine only is given.

lively artlessness are the charms of youth — The attention
vivace naturalezza sono incanto gioventù
of a mere gallant is often preferred to that of an honest
mero sovente preferita a quella
man — Miss Drummond and the Misses Reynolds were always
— — *furono*
attentive to the instructions of the master — The boots and
attento stivale
^{2 1 4}
shoes of John are not well cleaned — This is the proper
scarpa Giovanni pulito questo opportuno
^{5 2 4}
time and place — Ignorance and self-love are equally pre-
ora amor proprio del pari
^{2 1}
sumptuous — A just judge, learned and disinterested, and a
giudice dotto disinteressato
beautiful woman, young, virtuous and amiable are rare —
raro
Mrs. Douglas bought a red cloth for the square table — Here
— *comprò tappeto quadrato*
one breathes a wholesome air — The prints and the pictures
si respira stampa
in that drawing-room are beautiful — Uprightness and piety
quel salotto onestà pietà
are much esteemed even by (wicked men) — The love of
assai stimato anche (Abl.) scellerato (Pl.)
life and the fear of death are natural to men.
timore

LESSON IV.

COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.

As adjectives express the quality of substantives, we may either increase or diminish their qualities in differ-

ent ways, hence arise the degrees of comparison; the *positive*, *comparative* and *superlative*.

The *positive* denotes the quality of the thing *absolutely*: as, *Ricco*, Rich.

The comparative increases, lessens or equalizes the quality, hence three sorts of comparison; viz. of *superiority*, *inferiority* and *equality*.

The comparative of *superiority* is formed in Italian by the adverb *più*, more, before the adjective: as, *Più ricco*, Richer or more rich.

That of *inferiority* by the adverb *meno*, less: as, *Meno ricco*, Less rich.

The comparatives *better* and *worse* are rendered in Italian by *migliore*, better, if used adjectively, and *meglio*, better, if adverbially, and in the same manner *peggiore* and *peggio*, worse.

Than is expressed.

1. By *del*, *dello*, *della*: *dei*, *degli*, *delle*.
2. By *di*.
3. By *che*.

When two persons or things are compared with respect to some property which they both possess, but in different degrees, *than* is expressed by *del*, *dello* etc. or *di*.

By *del*, *dello* etc. when the comparative is followed by a noun or pronoun which takes the definite article (1).

EXAMPLES.

La rosa è più bella della viola. The rose is more beautiful
than the violet.

(1) The possessive and some indefinite pronouns admit generally of the definite article.

<i>La primavera è più piacevole dell'autunno.</i>	Spring is pleasanter <i>than</i> autumn.
<i>Esse meritano meno compassione delle altre.</i>	They are less deserving of pity <i>than</i> the others.
<i>Pietro è meno modesto del vostro amico.</i>	Peter is less modest <i>than</i> your friend.
<i>Il parlare è meno facile dello scrivere.</i>	Speaking is less easy <i>than</i> writing.

By *di*, when a noun or pronoun which does not take the definite article follows.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Egli è meglio disciplinato di Giovanni.</i>	He is better disciplined <i>than</i> John.
<i>Noi siamo stati più infelici di voi.</i>	We have been more unhappy <i>than</i> you.

By *che*, when the comparison is between two substantives or two adjectives; between two verbs in the Infinitive Mood, or two adverbs referring to the same subject, and when it precedes a noun governed by a preposition.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Egli ha più prudenza che coraggio.</i>	He has more prudence <i>than</i> courage.
<i>Voi siete più gaio che savio.</i>	You are more merry <i>than</i> wise.
<i>È meglio andarsene che restar qui.</i>	It is better to go away <i>than</i> to remain here.
<i>Pietro si comportò più coraggiosamente che prudentemente.</i>	Peter behaved more courageously <i>than</i> prudently.
<i>Antonio ebbe più fortuna in Londra che a Parigi.</i>	Anthony had more luck in London <i>than</i> in Paris.

NB. When *than* is followed by a verb not in the Infinitive Mood, it is rendered by *che non*: as, They have less money *than* you think, *Essi hanno meno danaro che non credete.*

In the comparative of *equality* the English adverbs

As as	} are rendered by	Tanto Quanto
So as		Così Come
As much as		
So much as		
As many as		. . . . . Come
So many as		. . . . . Quanto

We think it is more elegant to use *quanto* alone.

EXAMPLES.

<i>La delicatezza del gusto è un dono della natura raro quanto il vero genio.</i>	Delicacy of taste is a gift of nature <i>as rare as</i> true genius.
<i>Egli non ha cavalli quanto il vostro amico.</i>	He has not <i>as many</i> horses as your friend.
<i>Essi lavorano quanto voi.</i>	They work <i>as much as</i> you.

Much placed before a comparative is expressed by *molto, assai, vie, or via*: as, That picture is *much* finer than this, *Quel quadro è assai più bello, or molto più bello di questo.*

The article used with comparatives in English, is omitted in Italian: as, *The* more difficult a thing is, *the* more honourable it is, *Più una cosa è difficile, più essa è onorevole.*

SUPERLATIVE.

The superlative increases or lessens the quality in the greatest degree. It is *absolute* and *relative*. The former is not compared with any object, the latter is.

The superlative absolute is made by changing the last vowel of the positive into *issimo*, and rarely by placing the adverbs *molto*, *assai* before the positive: as, *Onesto*, Honest; *Onestissimo*, Very honest.

The duplication of the positive sometimes has the force of the superlative: as, *Buono buono*, Very good — *Bravo bravo*, Very well.

Adjectives in *co* and *go* requiring an *h* in the plural, take it also in the superlative: as, *Largo*, Broad; *Larghissimo*, Very broad — *Ricco*, Rich; *Ricchissimo*, Very rich,

Those in *io* change *io* into *issimo*: as, *Savio*, Wise; *Savissimo*, Very wise.

The superlative relative is expressed by *il più*, *la più* etc.: as, *Il più attivo*, The most active — *La più bella*, The handsomest. This superlative requires the Genitive after it: as, *Maria è la più amabile delle sorelle*, Mary is the most amiable of the sisters — *Voi avete parlato col più ricco uomo d'Inghilterra*, You have spoken with the richest man in England.

ADJECTIVES IRREGULAR

In their Comparatives and Superlatives.

Positive.	Comparative.		Superlative.
Adjective. Adverb.			
Good	<i>buono</i>	<i>migliore meglio</i>	<i>ottimo</i> , or <i>buonissimo</i> .
Bad	<i>cattivo</i>	<i>peggiore peggio</i>	<i>pessimo</i> , or <i>cattivissimo</i> .
Small	<i>piccolo</i>	<i>minore meno</i>	<i>minimo</i> , or <i>piccolissimo</i> .
Great	<i>grande</i>	<i>maggiore</i>	<i>massimo</i> , or <i>grandissimo</i> .
Acrid	<i>acre</i>		<i>acerrimo</i> .
Celebrated	<i>celebre</i>		<i>celeberrimo</i> .
Salubrious	<i>salubre</i>		<i>saluberrimo</i> .
Upright	<i>integro</i>		<i>integerrimo</i>
Miserable	<i>misero</i>		<i>miserrimo</i> , or <i>miserissimo</i> .

EXERCISE 3.

It happens often that a man who has much wit and
= *accade* ² *che* ¹ *il quale abbia* *spirito*

little experience is not so well received as a man who has
bene ricevuto

less wit, but who has the use of the world — She was a
che *usò* *mondo*

very bitter enemy of the very celebrated Miss Fleming — The
acre nemica —

most able men are not always the most virtuous — You
abile persona

will not see as much luxury in Berlin as in Vienna — The
vedrete *lusso* *Berlino* —

love of our neighbour is as necessary in society for the hap-
= *prossimo* *necessario*
piness of life as in christianity for eternal salvation —
cristianesimo

Mr. Hogg's translation was worse than your's, yet he ought
— *traduzione* (adj.) *tuttavia dovrebbe*

to translate better than you: he is however much fonder of
= (adv.) *però* *amante*

play than study; he conceives more than he is able to do,
gioco *immagina* *capace di fare*

consequently the more he undertakes the less he succeeds
per conseguenza *intraprende* *riesce*

— The Po is the most considerable river in Italy —
— *ragguardevole*

Mr. Napier speaks French more easily than she does — It is as
— *parla* *facilmente* *lei* =

easy to do good as to do evil — In the month of January
facile *bene* *male* *Gennaio*

the cold was most severe — The style of Fenelon is very
freddo *rigido* *stile* —

rich and harmonious — St. Peters at Rome is the most
San Pietro
 magnificent and the most celebrated church in Europe.
magnifico *chiesa*

LESSON V.

CARDINAL AND ORDINAL NUMBERS.

Cardinal.	Ordinal.
1 Uno, Una.	1st. Primo.
2 Due.	2d. Secondo.
3 Tre.	3d. Terzo.
4 Quattro.	4th. Quarto.
5 Cinque.	5th. Quinto.
6 Sei.	6th. Sesto.
7 Sette.	7th. Settimo.
8 Otto.	8th. Ottavo.
9 Nove.	9th. Nono.
10 Dieci.	10th. Decimo.
11 Undici.	11th. Undecimo, <i>or</i> decimo primo.
12 Dodici.	
13 Tredici.	12th. Duodecimo, <i>or</i> decimo secondo.
14 Quattordici.	
15 Quindici.	13th. Decimo terzo, <i>or</i> tredicesimo.
16 Sedici.	
17 Diciassette.	14th. Decimo quarto, <i>or</i> quattordicesimo.
18 Diciotto.	
19 Diciannove.	15th. Decimo quinto, <i>or</i> quindicesimo.
20 Venti.	
21 Ventuno.	16th. Decimo sesto, <i>or</i> sedicesimo.
22 Ventidue.	
23 Ventitre.	17th. Decimo settimo, <i>or</i> diciassettesimo.
24 Ventiquattro.	

Cardinal.	Ordinal.
25 Venticinque.	18th. Decimo ottavo, <i>or</i> diciottesimo.
26 Ventisei.	19th. Decimo nono, <i>or</i> diciannovesimo.
27 Ventisette.	20th. Ventesimo, <i>or</i> vigesimo
28 Ventotto.	21st. Ventesimo primo, <i>or</i> vigesimo primo.
29 Ventinove.	30th. Trentesimo, <i>or</i> trigesimo.
30 Trenta.	40th. Quarantesimo, <i>or</i> quadragesimo.
40 Quaranta.	50th. Cinquantesimo, <i>or</i> quinquagesimo.
50 Cinquanta.	60th. Sessantesimo, <i>or</i> sessagesimo.
60 Sessanta.	70th. Settantesimo, <i>or</i> settuagesimo.
70 Settanta.	80th. Ottantesimo, <i>or</i> ottuagesimo.
80 Ottanta.	90th. Novantesimo, <i>or</i> nonagesimo.
90 Novanta.	100th. Centesimo.
100 Cento.	1000th. Millesimo.
200 Dugento, <i>or</i> Duecento.	
300 Trecento.	
400 Quattrocento.	
1,000 Mille.	
2,000 Due mila.	
100,000 Cento mila.	
1,000,000 Un milione.	
2,000,000 Due milioni.	

COLLECTIVE.

Un paio	<i>a pair.</i>
Una decina	<i>half a score.</i>
Una dozzina	<i>a dozen.</i>
Una ventina	<i>a score.</i>
Una trentina	<i>to the number of thirty.</i>
Una quarantina	<i>to the number of forty.</i>
Una cinquantina	<i>half a hundred.</i>
Un centinaio	<i>to the number of a hundred.</i>
Un migliaio	<i>to the number of a thousand.</i>
A centinaia	<i>by hundreds.</i>
A migliaia	<i>by thousands.</i>
Millanta	<i>thousands upon thousands.</i>

DISTRIBUTIVE.

Ad uno ad uno	<i>one by one.</i>
A due a due	<i>two by two, and so on.</i>

Uno, una is subject to the same contraction when numeral, as it is when an article, but cannot be contracted at the end of a phrase: as, *Io ne ho due, e voi ne avete uno*, I have two and you have *one*.

When *uno* and *una* are joined to a number, they require the following substantive to be in the singular: as, *Ventun anno*, Twenty-one years — *Trentuna libbra*, Thirty-one pounds. But if the article or the substantive is placed before the number, the plural is used: as, *Vi manderò i ventuno scudi*, I shall send you the twenty-one scudi — *Vi manderò scudi ventuno*, I shall send you twenty-one scudi.

One or *a* before *hundred* or *thousand*, as also the conjunction *and* in the notation of years, are omitted in Italian: as, *A hundred soldiers*, *Cento soldati*—*A thousand ships*, *Mille navi*—In the year *one thousand eight hundred and forty three* — *Nell' anno mille ottocento quarantatre*.

The preposition *in*, followed in English by the date of the century, is rendered in Italian by *nel* (*anno*, year, being understood); but when the words *morning*, *evening* are preceded by the time of the day, *in* is expressed by *della*: as, *In 1843 at four in the evening*, or *in the morning*, *Nel mille ottocento quarantatre, alle quattro della sera, or della mattina*.

Ordinal numbers are declinable and agree in gender and number with the substantive: as, *Se verrete al teatro mi troverete al prim'ordine*, If you come to the theatre you will find me in the *first tier* — *Il suo ca-*

vallo vinse nella prima corsa, His horse won in the *first* race.

In speaking of Kings, Princes etc. we suppress in Italian the article placed in English before the ordinal number: as, George *the* fourth, *Giorgio quarto*.

For the date of the month we employ the ordinal number for the first day of the month, and the cardinal for the rest, with the masculine definite article *il* prefixed: as, *Il primo*, The first — *Il due*, The second — *Il tre*, The third, and so on with cardinal numbers.

The preposition *on*, employed in English before the date of the month, is suppressed in Italian, and the masculine article *il* alone used: as, *On the* first of July, or July the first, *Il primo di Luglio*.

In mentioning the time of the day, we say — *È l'un' ora*, It is one o'clock — *Sono le due*, or *due ore*, It is two o'clock — *Sono le quattro*, or *quattr'ore*, It is four o'clock. The first mode however is the best.

The *half* is expressed both by *mezzo* and *metà*. The former is invariable after a noun, but agrees with it in gender when placed before. The latter is employed when substantively used.

EXAMPLES.

He will go there at *half* past three. *Egli vi andrà alle tre e mezzo.*

Half a pound. *Una mezza libbra.*

Half the world. *La metà del mondo.*

Cut this pear in *half*. *Tagliate questa pera per metà.*

The *quarter* is expressed by *quarto*: as, I will be here at a *quarter* past five, *Sarò qui alle cinque ed un quarto*.

We say

<i>Fra mezz' ora.</i>	In half an hour.
<i>Le quattro meno un quarto.</i>	A quarter to four.
<i>Le sei ed un quarto.</i>	A quarter past six.

Ambo, *Ambedue*, both, indeclinable, and *ambi*, *ambe*, declinable, admit of the article with substantives: as, *Ambo*, *ambedue* or *ambi i cani*, Both dogs — *Ambo*, *ambedue* or *ambe le mani*, Both hands.

We say *Tutti e quattro*; All four — *Tutti e sei*, All six, and so on, except before a vowel: as, *Tutti otto* and not *Tutti e otto*, All eight.

Ago is expressed both by *fa* and *sono*: as, Two years ago, *Due anni fa*, or *due anni sono*. For a substantive singular, the first only is used: as, A year ago, *Un anno fa*—A week ago, *Una settimana fa*.

We say

<i>Da oggi ad otto</i>	This day week.
<i>Da oggi a quindici</i>	This day fortnight.
<i>Da oggi a un mese</i>	This day month.

EXERCISE 4.

Saturn makes his revolution in thirty years; Jupiter
Saturno fa la sua *Giove*
 in twelve; Mars in two; the Earth in one, or three hun-
Marte *Terra*
 dred and sixty five days and seven hours; Venus in two
Venere
 hundred and twenty five days, and Mercury in three months;
Mercurio
 the Moon, which is the satellite of the Earth (revolves round
Luna la quale — *gira intorno ad*
 it) in twenty seven days, seven hours and forty three
essa

minutes; but it does not overtake the Sun in less than
minuto *essa* = *giunge* *Sole*
 twenty nine days, twelve hours and forty five minutes —
 Leopold the first, Grand Duke of Tuscany, was a great
Leopoldo

man — At what o' clock does the Opera begin? In half an
che = ² ¹ — *comincia*

hour — He died in London on the 14th. of last month —
mori ² ¹
passato

They gained the two first battles—Both Kings were crowned
vinsero *furono coronato*

in the same year — He paid for that horse 31 guineas —
pagò = quel ghinea

He is certainly 41 — (Bring me) the twenty-one crowns
conta anno Portatemi scudo

which I lent you four months ago — Napoleon (was born)
cui prestai vi *Napoleone nacque*

at Ajaccio on the 14th. of August 1769, and died at St. Helena
in — Agosto Elena

on the 5th. of May 1821, and his remains were brought to
Maggio le sue spoglia portato

Paris, by the permission of the English, on the 15th. of
col permesso

October 1840.

Ottobre

LESSON VI.

VARIABLE NOUNS.

Are of three kinds, *Accrescitivi*, augmentatives — *Diminutivi*, diminutives — *Peggiorativi*, vilifying nouns.

AUGMENTATIVES.

Are formed by changing the last vowel into *one*, and are always of the masculine gender: as, From *libro*, book: *librone*, a great or large book—From *casa*, house: *casone*, a great or large house.

If the quality should imply a slight increase of *power* or *size* by way of augmenting some thing in itself diminutive, in this case the adjectives end in *otto*, *otta*: *ozzo*, *ozza*; *occio*, *occia*, and such terminations add not only an idea of *strength* and *vigour*, but also of *gracefulness*: as, From *giovine*, young: *giovinotto*, a young man: *giovinotta*, a young girl—From *bruno* and *bruna*, brown: *brunozzo*, a dark man: *brunozza*, a brunette—From *bello* and *bella*, beautiful: *belloccio* and *bellocchia*, well made.

DIMINUTIVES.

For the most part change the last vowel into *ino*, *etto*, *ello*: *ina*, *etta*, *ella*: as, From *fanciullo*, a child: *fanciullino*, a pretty dear little child—From *fanciulla*, a girl: *fanciullina*, a young dear girl—From *amore*, affection: *amoretto*, slight attachment—From *mano*, hand: *manina*, a beautiful small hand.

Those in *ello*, *ella*: *etto*, *etta*, convey a meaning not only of *smallness*, but also of *affection* and *love*, and sometimes of *contempt*: as, From *contadino*, a country man: *contadinello*, a smart country fellow—From *contadina*, a country woman: *contadinella*, a pretty little country girl—From *povero*, poor man: *poveretto* and *poverello*, poor creature—From *pazzo*, a madman: *pazzarello*, mad-cap—From *vecchio*, an old man: *vecchierello*, good old man—From *vecchia*, old woman: *vecchierella*, poor old woman.

Diminutives signifying *contempt* have also various terminations: as, From *cosa*, thing: *cosuzza* and *cosuccia*, a trifle — From *regalo*, present: *regaluccio* and *regaluzzo*, a small present — From *uomo*, a man: *omicciuolo*, and *omicciattolo*, a silly man — From *poeta*, a poet: *poetuccio*, a rhymster — From *libro*, book: *libri-ciattolo*, an insignificant book, and *libercolo*, a bad little book.

VILIFYING NOUNS.

End in *astro*, *astra*: *accio*, *accia*: as, From *filosofo*, a philosopher: *filosofastro*, a bad or paltry philosopher — From *giovine*, a girl: *giovinastra* a naughty girl — From *popolo*, a people: *popolaccio*, mob — From *casa*, a house: *casaccia*, a large bad house.

There are also some vilifying nouns ending in *ame*, *ume* and *aglia*: as, From *carne*, meat: *carname*, carrion — From *putredine*, putridness: *putridume*, a heap of rotten things — From *gente*, people: *gentame* and *gentaglia*, rabble.

Adverbs also admit of these modifications: as, From *poco*, little, we form *pochino* — From *adagio* softly: *adagino* — From *bene*, well: *benino*, pretty well: *benone*, very well indeed.

EXERCISE 5.

The fortunate attachment of that smart country fellow

amore *quel*

2

1

makes him sing every day — That young girl pleases every

fa *lo* *can!are* *ogni* *quella* *piace* *a*

body, she has two pretty little hands and two small feet

tutti

which charm the beholder, Mr. Sullivan made her (the
che incantano spettatore — fece le

day before yesterday) a small present — Did you see that
jeri l'altro avete veduto

poor old man with whom I spoke yesterday? No, why? I

wanted (to ask him) if he had seen my little dog. Come
con cui parlai jeri — voleva chiedergli aveva il mio venite

perhaps (we shall find him) in that small hut, where that
lo troveremo casa dove

brunette lives who is rather well made — Do not read such
sta che = leggete tale

a bad little book. The author is not, as you think a rhym-
credete

ster. He seems to me a bad poet -- You always speak to me
sembra a me parlate mi

of that mad-cap, have you perhaps some slight attachment
avete qualche

for her? I? how much (you are mistaken) poor creature!
lei io quanto v'ingannate

— (In order to) speak a foreign language well, it is neces-
Per =

sary to begin very slowly -- They were very much annoyed
= furono molestati

by the rabble following them.

(Abl.) *che seguiva li*

LESSON VII.

PRONOUNS,

A Pronoun is a word employed instead of a noun, to avoid the too frequent repetition of the same—There are seven kinds of Pronouns, viz. *Personal, Conjunctive, Possessive, Demonstrative, Relative, Interrogative, and Indefinite.*

PERSONAL AND CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

Personal Pronouns are expressive of persons. When put in the oblique cases governed by verbs, they are called *conjunctive*.

Pronouns of the first person are intended to signify the person or persons, who speak, or who are associated with the speaker: as, *Io, I; Noi, We.*

Those of the second, signify the person or persons to whom the speech is addressed: as, *Tu, Thou; Voi, You.*

Those of the third, some other person or persons spoken of: as, *Egli, He; Ella, She; Eglino, mas. Elleno, fem. They.*

FIRST PERSON.

Singular.

Conjunctive.

Nom.	<i>I</i>	<i>Io</i>	
Gen.	<i>Of me</i>	<i>Di me</i>	
Dat.	<i>To me</i>	<i>A me</i>	<i>Mi.</i>
Acc.	<i>Me</i>	<i>Me</i>	<i>Mi.</i>
Abl.	<i>From me</i>	<i>Da me</i>	

Plural.

Nom.	<i>We</i>	Noi	
Gen.	<i>Of us</i>	Di noi	
Dat.	<i>To us</i>	A noi	Ci, or Ne.
Acc.	<i>Us</i>	Noi	Ci, or Ne.
Abl.	<i>From us</i>	Da noi	

Conjunctive.

SECOND PERSON.

Singular.

Nom.	<i>Thou</i>	Tu	
Gen.	<i>Of thee</i>	Di te	
Dat.	<i>To thee</i>	A te	Ti.
Acc.	<i>Thee</i>	Te	Ti.
Abl.	<i>From thee</i>	Da te	

Plural.

Nom.	<i>You</i>	Voi	
Gen.	<i>Of you</i>	Di voi	
Dat.	<i>To you</i>	A voi	Vi.
Acc.	<i>You</i>	Voi	Vi.
Abl.	<i>From you</i>	Da voi	

THIRD PERSON.

Singular-Masculine.

Nom.	<i>He</i>	Egli, Ei, E'	
Gen.	<i>Of him</i>	Di lui	
Dat.	<i>To him</i>	A lui	Gli.
Acc.	<i>Him</i>	Lui	Lo, or Il.
Abl.	<i>From him</i>	Da lui	

Plural.

Conjunctive.

Nom.	<i>They</i>	Eglino
Gen.	<i>Of them</i>	Di loro
Dat.	<i>To them</i>	A loro
Acc.	<i>Them</i>	Loro
Abl.	<i>From them</i>	Da loro

Li, Gli.

THIRD PERSON.

Singular-Feminine.

Nom.	<i>She</i>	Ella
Gen.	<i>Of her</i>	Di lei
Dat.	<i>To her</i>	A lei
Acc.	<i>Her</i>	Lei
Abl.	<i>From her</i>	Da lei

Le.

La.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>They</i>	Elleno
Gen.	<i>Of them</i>	Di loro
Dat.	<i>To them</i>	A loro
Acc.	<i>Them</i>	Loro
Abl.	<i>From them</i>	Da loro

Le.

Singular and Plural.

MAS. AND FEM.

Gen.	<i>Of</i>	{ <i>one's self, himself,</i> <i>herself, themselves.</i> }	Di sè
Dat.	<i>To</i>	{ <i>one's self, himself,</i> <i>herself, themselves.</i> }	A sè Si.
Acc.		{ <i>one's self, himself,</i> <i>herself, themselves.</i> }	Sè Si.
Abl.	<i>From</i>	{ <i>one's self, himself,</i> <i>herself, themselves.</i> }	Da sè

FIRST PERSON.

Singular-Masculine.

Conjunctive.

Nom.	<i>Myself</i>	Io stesso	
Gen.	<i>Of myself</i>	Di me stesso	
Dat.	<i>To myself</i>	A me stesso	Mi.
Acc.	<i>Myself</i>	Me stesso	Mi.
Abl.	<i>From myself</i>	Da me stesso	

Plural.

Nom.	<i>Ourselves</i>	Noi stessi	
Gen.	<i>Of ourselves</i>	Di noi stessi	
Dat.	<i>To ourselves</i>	A noi stessi	Ci, or Ne.
Acc.	<i>Ourselves</i>	Noi stessi	Ci, or Ne.
Abl.	<i>From ourselves</i>	Da noi stessi	

SECOND PERSON.

Singular-Masculine.

Nom.	<i>Thyself</i>	Tu stesso	
Gen.	<i>Of thyself</i>	Di te stesso	
Dat.	<i>To thyself</i>	A te stesso	Ti.
Acc.	<i>Thyself</i>	Te stesso	Ti.
Abl.	<i>From thyself</i>	Da te stesso	

Plural.

Nom.	<i>Yourselves</i>	Voi stessi	
Gen.	<i>Of yourselves</i>	Di voi stessi	
Dat.	<i>To yourselves</i>	A voi stessi	Vi.
Acc.	<i>Yourselves</i>	Voi stessi	Vi.
Abl.	<i>From yourselves</i>	Da voi stessi	

THIRD PERSON.

Singular-Masculine.

Conjunctive.

Nom.	<i>Himself</i>	Egli stesso	
Gen.	<i>Of himself</i>	Di sè stesso	
Dat.	<i>To himself</i>	A sè stesso	Si.
Acc.	<i>Himself</i>	Sè stesso	Si.
Abl.	<i>From himself</i>	Da sè stesso	

Plural.

Nom.	<i>Themselves</i>	Eglino stessi	
Gen.	<i>Of themselves</i>	Di sè stessi	
Dat.	<i>To themselves</i>	A sè stessi	Si.
Acc.	<i>Themselves</i>	Sè stessi	Si.
Abl.	<i>From themselves</i>	Da sè stessi	

THIRD PERSON.

Singular-Feminine.

Nom.	<i>Herself</i>	Ella stessa	
Gen.	<i>Of herself</i>	Di sè stessa	
Dat.	<i>To herself</i>	A sè stessa	Si.
Acc.	<i>Herself</i>	Sè stessa	Si.
Abl.	<i>From herself</i>	Da sè stessa	

Plural.

Nom.	<i>Themselves</i>	Elleno stesse	
Gen.	<i>Of themselves</i>	Di sè stesse	
Dat.	<i>To themselves</i>	A sè stesse	Si.
Acc.	<i>Themselves</i>	Sè stesse	Si.
Abl.	<i>From themselves</i>	Da sè stesse	

Personal Pronouns in the nominative case are generally omitted, except when an emphasis is required (1).

The English use the verb *To be* impersonally with the pronouns in the Nominative case, but we make the verb agree with the pronoun to which it relates: as, *It is I, Sono io* — *It is you who say so, Siete voi che lo dite.*

Egli and *Ella* are used ornamentally in the sense of *it*: as, *Egli è vero che ho amato ed amo Giannetta, ed ella è impossibil cosa ch'io possa abbandonarla, It is true that I have loved and love Jane, and it is impossible that I should abandon her.*

Conjunctive Pronouns either precede or follow the verb by which they are governed. In common conversation they are usually put before a verb: as, *La conosco, I know her* — *Ci ama, He loves us.* When placed after the verb, they are always joined to it: as, *Sembrami, It appears to me.*

When the verb terminates in a vowel which is accented, as also in all verbs of one syllable, the initial letter of the conjunctive pronoun is doubled: as, *Dirolle che siete venuto, I will tell her you are come* — *Essa fammi spesso questo favore, She does me this favour often.*

Gli is excepted: as, *Dirogli, and not Diroggli, I will tell him.*

The conjunctive pronoun is almost invariably placed

(1) *Lui, lei, loro,* can never be used as Nominatives instead of *Egli, ella, eglino, elleo*: the pupil is therefore particularly requested to guard against a custom so frequent amongst the Tuscans and still more generally tolerated by the Florentines — Many other errors of the same kind are constantly occurring, for instance they say *gli* for *le* and *loro* — *ci dissi, ce lo dissi, when gli dissi, le dissi, dissi loro: glielo dissi, lo dissi loro* etc. should be used, according to the gender and number of persons, to which they apply: the above being evidently grammatical faults in our Language.

1st. After a verb in the Infinitive Mood, which then loses its final *e*: as, *Credo di vederla stasera*, I think I shall see *her* this evening.

When two Infinitives meet together, the conjunctive pronoun is placed after the first: as, *Ho piacere di poterle fare questo favore*, I am glad to be able to do *her* this favour.

2^d. After a Gerund: as, *Scrivendole, la saluterò in nome vostro*, In writing *to her*, I will salute *her* in your name.

If however the *Infinitive* or *Gerund* be preceded by a negative particle, the conjunctive personal pronoun may be then elegantly placed before it.

EXAMPLES.

Le dirò di non vi aver veduto. I will tell *her* I have not seen *you*.

Non lo temendo, ho trionfato del mio nemico. By not fearing *him*, I have conquered my enemy.

3^d. After a participle past preceded by the participle present of an auxiliary verb, which latter participle is then not expressed in Italian.

EXAMPLES.

Incontratolo oggi, gli ho parlato di voi. Having met *him* to-day, I have spoken to *him* of *you*.

Mostratale la lettera, non osò più parlare. The letter being shown *to her*, she dared not speak any more.

4th. After a verb in the Imperative Mood when *affirmatively* employed (except in the third person of both numbers), when *negatively*, it precedes.

EXAMPLES.

Raccontateci qualche cosa di nuovo, e non ci parlate di quel pazzerello.	Relate to us something new, and do not speak to us about that mad cap.
Mi dia il mio.	Let him give me my property.
Ci consolino dopo tanta afflizione.	Let them console us after so much affliction.

5th. After the word *Ecco*: as, *Eccomi*, Here *I* am—*Eccoci*, Here *we* are—*Eccolo*, Here *he* is—*Eccone*, Here are *some* etc.

With me is expressed by *meco*—*with thee*, by *teco*—*with himself*, *with herself*, *with themselves* by *seco*.

With him, *with her*, *with them*, are also expressed by *seco*, when they have reference to the nominative of the verb: as, He will conduct me *with him*, *Egli mi condurrà seco*.

NB. When a verb governs a personal pronoun or pronouns joined by a conjunction to any other kind of pronoun or noun, the former remains personal and does not become conjunctive.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Io sgridai lei e non lui.</i>	I scolded <i>her</i> and not <i>him</i> .
<i>Maria non lo disse nè a lui nè a Paolo.</i>	Mary neither told it to <i>him</i> nor to Paul.
<i>Il Signor Penrice o ne parlò a te, o a mio padre.</i>	Mr. Penrice spoke of it either to <i>thee</i> , or to my father.
<i>Io so che il Signor Acland non maltrattò nè lei nè il Signor Napier.</i>	I know Mr. Acland neither illtreated <i>her</i> nor Mr. Napier.

<i>Il Signor Stratton ama molto loro e la famiglia Rogers.</i>	Mr. Stratton loves <i>them</i> and the Rogers' family very much.
<i>Ella non vide lui, ma il cugino.</i>	She did not see <i>him</i> , but his cousin.

The following serve as relative pronouns in the accusative case only, and are referred to things as well as persons.

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>Mas. Lo or Il</i>	<i>Him or It.</i>	<i>Mas. Li or Gli</i>	} <i>Them.</i>
<i>Fem. La</i>	<i>Her or It.</i>	<i>Fem. Le</i>	

EXAMPLES.

<i>Avete letto quel libro? No, ma lo leggerò presto.</i>	Have you read that book? No, but I will read <i>it</i> soon.
<i>Avete veduto il Signor Hoppner? Sì, l'ho veduto poco fa.</i>	Have you seen Mr. Hoppner? Yes, I have seen <i>him</i> a little while ago.
<i>Non avete scritto ancora quella lettera? No, ma la scriverò.</i>	Have you not yet written that letter? No, but I will write <i>it</i> .
<i>Dove sono i miei guanti? Io non gli ho veduti.</i>	Where are my gloves? I have not seen <i>them</i> .
<i>Vengono le vostre sorelle stasera? Io le aspetto.</i>	Do your sisters come to night? I expect <i>them</i> .

So is rendered by *lo* or *la*. If it relates to a noun substantive, it agrees with it in gender, if to an adjective, it is expressed invariably by *lo*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Siete voi il Signor S.? Sì lo sono.</i>	Are you Mr. S.? Yes I am.
--	---------------------------

« here I am » but I saw him no more — The world prizes
³ ² ¹ ⁴
vidi stima
 many things which in themselves are worthless — To please
che dispregevole Per

her you must never flatter her — She spoke to them of
¹ ⁴ ³ ²
(Dat.) bisogna che lusinghiate

you — Mr. Robertson will not say such a thing either to
² ¹ ² ⁴ ³
 — *dirà nè*

her or to them — They will not come with me, but my
² ¹
nè vogliono la mia
 company honours them — It is true that they have done
onora che fatto
 wrong, but I still esteem them — Having told her what you
tuttavia detto (Dat.)

told me, after some days I saw her, and she did not salute
² ¹ ²
diceste salutò

me : ask her why? No, I will not speak to her (any more) —
² ¹ ³
chiedete (Dat.) voglio più

She said, it was I, it was not they, who spoke in your
disse parlai vostro
 favour — Let him return her the book which she lent
renda (Dat.) cui prestò

him two months ago — The Misses Heming begged me to ask
(Dat.) — pregarono

you if you would go with them to night to Mrs. Macalister's.
volevate (Abl.) —

Tell them (I am very sorry) not to be able to favour them.
che mi dispiace assai di =

LESSON VIII.

PERSONAL AND CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS CONTINUED.

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Esso</i>	<i>He.</i>	
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Essa</i>	<i>She.</i>	
<i>Mas.</i>	{ <i>Medesimo or</i> <i>Stesso</i>	<i>Self.</i>	
<i>Fem.</i>	{ <i>Medesima or</i> <i>Stessa</i>		
<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Desso</i>	{ <i>Own-self,</i> <i>or</i> <i>Very same</i> <i>person.</i>	
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Dessa</i>		
<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Essi</i>	{ <i>They.</i>	
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Esse</i>		
<i>Mas.</i>	{ <i>Medesimi or</i> <i>Stessi</i>	<i>Selves.</i>	
<i>Fem.</i>	{ <i>Medesime or</i> <i>Stesse</i>		
<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Dessi</i>	{ <i>Own-</i> <i>selves, or</i> <i>Very same</i> <i>persons.</i>	
<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Desse</i>		

The two first pronouns do not change in the oblique cases.

Esso is applied both to persons and things. With persons it is employed as *egli*, but more demonstratively: as, *Come esso aveva disposto*, As he had disposed — *E son queste esse le sue parole*, And these are his own words.

It is frequently united (and always without changing number or gender) with *lui*, *lei* and *loro* governed by the preposition *con*: as, *Con esso lui*, With him — *Con esso lei*, With her — *Con esso loro*, With them.

It is often united to the prepositions *lungo*, along, and *sovra*, upon, forming a single word: as, *Lunghezza il fiume*, Along the river — *Sovresso il ponte*, Upon the bridge.

In its oblique cases it performs the office of a relative pronoun: as, *Ho veduto la Tribuna e in mezzo di essa*

la Venere de' Medici, I have seen the Tribune and in the midst of it the Venus of Medici.

Medesimo or *Stesso* is used with pronouns to express emphasis: as, *Lo farò io medesimo* or *io stesso*, I will do it *myself*.

Desso has more force than the preceding, and implies *identity* and *asseveration*. It is employed in the Nominative only of both numbers, and for the most part with the verbs *Essere*, To be, and *Parere*, To seem: as, *Questi è desso e non favella*, It is *himself* and he does not speak — *Dipinto sì somigliante alla natura che par dessa*, Painted so like nature that it seems nature *herself*.

Ne is employed as the conjunctive personal pronoun *ci* in the dative and accusative case: as, *Sole in tanta afflizione ne hanno lasciate*, They have left *us* alone in so great affliction — *Questo ne sarebbe gran biasimo*, That would be a great reproach *to us*. But *ne* in that signification is used more in poetry than in prose.

It is used as a relative pronoun referring to some antecedent, or subject of discourse, and signifies

Of, to, for, from, by, with or about	}	him, her, it, them.
--------------------------------------	---	------------------------

EXAMPLES.

<i>Non è l'abbondanza delle ricchezze che può renderci felici, ma l'uso che ne facciamo.</i>	It is not the abundance of riches that can make us happy, but the use we make of <i>them</i> .
--	--

<i>Parla egli di quella Signora?</i>	Does he speak of that Lady?
<i>Sì ne parla continuamente, ma se ne fida pochissimo.</i>	Yes he speaks of <i>her</i> continually, but he trusts <i>her</i> very little.

<i>Non oso parlarvene.</i>	I dare not speak to you about <i>it</i> .
----------------------------	---

In translating *ne* into English, it is necessary to add *one, any, some, or substitute of it, of them*: as, *Avete libri? Ne ho, Have you any books, I have some — Non ne ho, I have none — Queste sono belle arancie, volete darmene? These are beautiful oranges, will you give me some.*

It is employed with intransitive verbs of motion, having reference to some place mentioned or understood: as, *Andarsene, To go — Venirsene, To come*: as, *Essi se ne venivano passo passo, They came step by step — Essa ci arrivò quando io ne partiva, She arrived here when I departed from hence.*

Ci and *Vi* are employed as conjunctive personal pronouns in the dative and accusative case.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Egli ci assisterà.</i>	He will assist us.
<i>Essa ci diede una ricompensa.</i>	She gave us a reward.
<i>Essi vi hanno offeso.</i>	They have offended you.
<i>Io vi parlo da galantuomo.</i>	I speak to you as an honest man.

They are employed also as relative pronouns referring to things, and signify

Of, to, for, at, in, by or upon	{ it
	them.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Provai quella perdita quando meno ci or vi pensava.</i>	I experienced that loss, when I least thought of it.
<i>Egli imparerà l'Italiano, perchè ci or vi si applica.</i>	He will learn Italian, because he applies himself to it.
<i>Non temete, ci or vi porrò io rimedio.</i>	Do not fear, I will provide a remedy for it.
<i>Esso lo ha fatto, ma non ci or vi guadagnerà nulla.</i>	He has done it, but he will get nothing by it.

The impersonal phrases *There is* — *There are* — *There was* etc. are expressed in Italian by *ci* or *vi*: as, *Ci sono* or *vi sono alcune persone che. . . There are some persons who. . . .* — *Vi sono alcuni libri?* Are *there* any books?

They are used also as adverbs of locality, *Ci* having the sense of *Here*, *Vi* of *There*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Andate a Roma? Sì, vi vado.</i>	Are you going to Rome? Yes,
<i>Quando ci ritornerete? Vi farò saper per lettera quando mi ci dovrete aspettare.</i>	I am going <i>there</i> . When shall you return <i>here</i> ? I will let you know when you may expect me <i>here</i> again.
<i>Mi dispiace tanto di partire di Londra quando appunto voi ci venite.</i>	I am so sorry to leave London just as you arrive (<i>here</i>).
<i>Egli è un luogo delizioso, ho intenzione di stabilirmivi.</i>	It is a fine place, I intend to settle <i>there</i> .

Sometimes *ci* and *vi*, as conjunctive personal pronouns, meet with *ci* and *vi* as adverbs of locality. When such is the case, the two latter are substituted for each other, to prevent an awkward repetition of them in different senses: as, I will conduct you *there*, *Io vi ci condurrò* — You will see us *here* in a short time, *Vi ci vedrete fra poco*. In these cases we may use also the adverbs of locality: as, *Io vi condurrò colà* — *Ci vedrete qui fra poco*.

When *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, *si*, as datives, or belonging to a reflective verb, meet with the accusatives *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*, or with the relative pronoun *ne*, they simply change their *i* into *e* if placed before the verb, but when coming after it, the two are united and joined to the verb.

EXAMPLES.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p><i>Avete ricevuto quei libri da Carlo? Sì. Quando ve li mandò? Ieri, e doveva averceli mandati alcuni giorni fa.</i></p> | <p>Have you received those books from Charles? Yes. When did he send <i>them</i> to you? Yesterday, and he should have sent <i>them</i> to us some days ago.</p> |
| <p><i>Essi se ne vantano, quando dovrebbero invece vergognarsene.</i></p> | <p>They boast <i>of it</i>, when they should rather be ashamed <i>of it</i>.</p> |

Observe that *ci* and *vi* as adverbs of locality are subject to similar variation when they meet with any of those accusatives; as well as *ci* or *vi* in impersonal phrases, when they meet with the pronoun *ne*.

EXAMPLES.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p><i>Vedete quell'uccellino in quell'albero? Non ve lo vedo.</i></p> | <p>Do you see that little bird in that tree? I do not see <i>it</i> there.</p> |
| <p><i>Ve ne sono due.</i></p> | <p>There are two of <i>them</i>.</p> |

NB. The pronoun *gli*, as dative, does not change its *i* into *e* when meeting with any of the above accusatives, but has an *e* added to it, and is invariably united in one word, whether placed before or after the verb, *being* in this case used for the masculine and feminine gender.

EXAMPLES.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p><i>Il Signor Parker glieli manderà dimani.</i></p> | <p>Mr. Parker will send <i>them</i> to him (or to her) to-morrow.</p> |
| <p><i>Procurerò di parlargliene stasera.</i></p> | <p>I will endeavour to speak to him (or to her) <i>of it</i> this evening.</p> |

Sometimes these pronouns when meeting together are elegantly contracted into one word, losing their final vowel, except before any other vowel, *s impura* or *z*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ella</i> mel raccomandò calda- mente.	She recommended <i>him</i> (or <i>it</i>) to me earnestly.
<i>Essi</i> non se lo immagineranno mai.	They will never imagine <i>it</i> .

The following table contains every possible mode in which these conjunctive pronouns can occur.

Compound Conjunctive Pronouns.

<i>Mas.</i> Me lo <i>him or it to me.</i>	<i>Mas.</i> Ce lo <i>him or it to us.</i>
<i>Fem.</i> Me la <i>her or it to me.</i>	<i>Fem.</i> Ce la <i>her or it to us.</i>
<i>Mas.</i> Me li <i>them to me.</i>	<i>Mas.</i> Ce li <i>them to us.</i>
<i>Fem.</i> Me le <i>them to me.</i>	<i>Fem.</i> Ce le <i>them to us.</i>
<i>Mas.</i> Te lo <i>him or it to thee.</i>	<i>Mas.</i> Ve lo <i>him or it to you.</i>
<i>Fem.</i> Te la <i>her or it to thee.</i>	<i>Fem.</i> Ve la <i>her or it to you.</i>
<i>Mas.</i> Te li <i>them to thee.</i>	<i>Mas.</i> Ve li <i>them to you.</i>
<i>Fem.</i> Te le <i>them to thee.</i>	<i>Fem.</i> Ve le <i>them to you.</i>
<i>Mas.</i> Glielo <i>him or it to him,</i> <i>to her.</i>	<i>Mas.</i> Se lo <i>him or it to one's</i> <i>self, themselves.</i>
<i>Fem.</i> Gliela <i>her or it to him,</i> <i>to her.</i>	<i>Fem.</i> Se la <i>her or it to one's</i> <i>self, themselves.</i>
<i>Mas.</i> Glieli <i>them to him or to</i> <i>her.</i>	<i>Mas.</i> Se li <i>them to them-</i> <i>selves.</i>
<i>Fem.</i> Gliele <i>them to him or to</i> <i>her.</i>	<i>Fem.</i> Se le <i>them to them-</i> <i>selves.</i>
Me ne <i>some of it etc. to</i> <i>me.</i>	Ce ne <i>some of it etc. to</i> <i>us.</i>
Te ne <i>some of it etc. to</i> <i>thee.</i>	Ve ne <i>some of it etc. to</i> <i>you.</i>
Gliene <i>some etc. to him,</i> <i>to her.</i>	Se ne <i>some etc. to him-</i> <i>self, themselves.</i>

Mas. Lo....loro him or it to them.

Fem. La....loro her or it to them.

Mas. Liloro them to them.

Fem. Le....loro them to them.

Ne....loro some, some of it etc.
to them.

NB. When these five pronouns *lo, la, li, le* and *ne* are used in conjunction with *loro*, they must be placed before the verb, and *loro* after, except with the *Infinitive, Gerund, Participle past*, and *Imperative affirmatively employed*, in which case they must be placed after in two distinct syllables; as, *Non lo darò loro*, I shall not give it to them — *Datelo loro*, Give it to them etc.

EXERCISE 7.

You have no doubt (some foundation) in reproaching
siete senza dubbio fondato a (Inf.)
 him for his faults, but is there (any one) on earth who is
(Dat.)=la sua mancanza alcuno che sia
 exempt from them? — When Louis sends me Alfieri I
manderà —
 (will return) it to them — I (shall speak) to them about it,
restituirò parlerò
 and give you a faithful account of it — If you meet with them,
darò = esatto vi avvenite in
 tell it only to her, and not to Paul — When they return us
restituiranno
 those books which we lent them, (we will send) them to
que' cui prestammo manderemo alle
 your sisters, if they (had sent) us them before, we (should
vostre avessero mandati avremmo
 have lent) them to them some days ago — The uncle intrusted
prestati commise
 some bottles of Champagne to us, but (we have not been able)
— non abbiamo potuto
 to send them to him — Do him that favour, I (was thinking)
= Fate quel pensava
 of it now — Come and see us often. Yes, we (will come) here
Venite a (Inf.) verremo

very often — Is it uncle John who comes? Yes it is himself.

viene

He looks uneasy. He is always so — Are there any gloves?

sembra inquieto

quanto

There are not any. There was a pair upon the little table

paio

this morning. I have not seen them — I want some paper,

veduti

Ho bisogno di

ask Paul for some — As you have so many lemons send them

(Dat.)

Siccome

limone mandate

some. I cannot send them any, because I have promised

non posso

promesso

some of them to Mr. Valpy — If Mr. Acland comes soon,

—

—

verrà

2 1 2

we (will go) there directly, perhaps he will not take you

andremo

subito

condurrà

there, (on the contrary) (I believe he will.) — Let Mr. Travers

anzi

lo credo

—

speak to them about it, and let him give us an answer in time.

parli

dia (Dat.)

LESSON IX.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

Are those which relate to possession or property.

M. Sing. F. Sing. M. Plur. F. Plur.

Il mio	La mia	I miei	Le mie	<i>My, or mine.</i>
Il tuo	La tua	I tuoi	Le tue	<i>Thy, or thine.</i>
Il suo	La sua	I suoi	Le sue	<i>His, her, her's, its.</i>
Il nostro	La nostra	I nostri	Le nostre	<i>Our, or our's.</i>
Il vostro	La vostra	I vostri	Le vostre	<i>Your, or your's.</i>
Il loro	La loro	I loro	Le loro	<i>Their, or their's.</i>

These pronouns are generally declined with the definite article, and agree with *the thing possessed* and not, as in English, with *the possessor*, for which reason they must be repeated either before or after the substantive.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Pietro mi mandò ieri la sua</i>	<i>Peter sent me his carriage</i>
<i>carrozza.</i>	<i>yesterday.</i>
<i>Maria ha venduto il suo anello.</i>	<i>Mary has sold her ring.</i>
<i>Ei lesse la lettera mia e la</i>	<i>He read my letter and your's.</i>
<i>vostra.</i>	

My, thy, his, her, our, your, their coming with a noun that signifies any corporeal part, any faculty or affection of the mind (such as *anima*, soul — *cuore*, heart — *memoria*, memory — *speranza*, hope — *paura*, fear) and a verb of *action* or *motion*, are expressed by corresponding conjunctive personal pronouns in the dative case: viz. *mi, ti, gli, le, ci, vi, loro*, and the definite article is placed before the substantive.

EXAMPLES.

<i>I broke his arm.</i>	<i>Gli ruppi il braccio.</i>
<i>We cut our fingers.</i>	<i>Ci tagliammo le dita.</i>
<i>You hurt your foot.</i>	<i>Vi faceste male al piede.</i>

Consonant to this rule *his, her, their* are expressed by *si*, if they have reference to the same person or persons as the nominative, and by *gli, le, loro*, if they have reference to some other person or persons.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Peter broke his (own) arm.</i>	<i>Pietro si ruppe il braccio.</i>
<i>Peter broke his (John's) arm.</i>	<i>Pietro gli ruppe il braccio.</i>

She cut <i>her</i> (own) finger.	<i>Ella si tagliò il dito.</i>
She cut <i>her</i> (Mary's) finger.	<i>Ella le tagliò il dito.</i>
They hurt <i>their</i> (own) legs.	<i>Essi si fecero male alle gambe.</i>
They hurt <i>their</i> (of others) legs.	<i>Essi fecero loro male alle gambe.</i>

But when the verb expresses an action which has more reference to the subject referred to, than to the person who is the nominative of the verb, then we omit the possessive pronoun: as, *Volgete gli occhi a quel quadro*, Turn *your* eyes to that picture — *Riposate il capo su questo guanciale*, Rest *your* head on this pillow.

When the possessive pronouns are immediately followed by a noun of *title* or *kindred* in the singular number, they do not take the article, *loro* alone excepted: as, *Sua Maestà*, His Majesty — *Mio padre*, My father — *La loro madre*, Their mother. But they require the article when the noun is in the plural, when it is a diminutive, when the possessive pronoun is put after, and when an adjective, or the words *Signore*, *Signora*, *Signorina* intervene.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ella lo disse a' miei fratelli.</i>	She said it to my brothers.
<i>La sua figliuolina non istà bene.</i>	His dear little daughter is not well.
<i>Ne parlerò al padre mio.</i>	I will speak to my father about it.
<i>I miei complimenti alla vostra cara madre.</i>	My compliments to your dear mother.
<i>Così mi ordinò la Maestà sua.</i>	Thus his Majesty ordered me.
<i>Ce lo disse il vostro Signore Zio.</i>	Your uncle told it to us.

When any noun, accompanied by the possessive pronoun, relates to the subject of the proposition, the possessive pronoun is omitted: as, *Egli ha perduto il padre e la madre*, He has lost *his* father and mother.

They dispense with the article when they are preceded by some indeterminate or demonstrative pronouns, and when they follow the Verb *To be* in the sense of *belonging to*: as, *Qualche vostro nemico*, Some enemy of your's — *Ogni mia speranza*, Every hope of mine — *Di chi è questo libro? È mio*, Whose is this book? It is mine.

Il mio, il tuo, il suo, il nostro, il vostro, il loro are employed substantively in the singular to signify personal substance or property: as, *Ella non ha cura del suo*, She does not take care of her own (property). In the plural they signify parents, relations, friends, followers etc. as, *Il Generale comandò a' suoi di attaccare il nemico*, The general ordered his troops to attack the enemy.

One's own, employed in an indeterminate sense, is rendered in Italian by *proprio* preceded by the article: as, To confess one's own sins is a mark. . . *Il confessare i proprj peccati è un segno. . .*

When *own* is added to the possessive pronoun, it may be omitted, or expressed with or without the possessive pronoun: as, She wrote that letter with her own hand, *Ella scrisse quella lettera di suo pugno*, or *di suo proprio pugno*, or *di proprio pugno*.

Since *suo* has reference only to a singular noun in the third person; to prevent confusion in such sentences as the following, it is necessary to render *his* by *di lui*—*her* by *di lei*—*their* by *di loro*: as, *Maria ama suo fratello ed i figli di lui*, Mary loves her brother and his sons — *Essi ingannarono Paolo ed Antonio ed i figli di loro*, They deceived Paul and Anthony and their sons — *Maria ama suo fratello ed i suoi figli*, in this case, they are the sons of Mary and not of her brother. It would however be useless to make use of such a mode of expression, when the nominative is in the first or second

person: as, *Noi lodammo molto Giovanni e suo figlio*, We praised John and *his* son very much. It is easy to see in this example whose is the *son*, as in the following whose is the *daughter*, *Voi amate vostra sorella e sua figlia*, You love your sister and *her* daughter.

A *friend of mine*, of *thine* etc. is expressed by *Un mio amico*, *un tuo amico* etc. as, A friend of your's has deceived me, *un vostro amico m' ha ingannato*.

In English the possessive pronoun is sometimes found before a *Gerund*, performing the office of the verb, of which the possessive pronoun is the subject. When such is the case, the *Gerund* is to be put in the Infinitive Mood with the masculine definite article prefixed, and the possessive pronoun is rendered by its corresponding nominative personal pronoun.

EXAMPLES,

My being or having.

Of *thy* being or having.

To *his* being or having.

From *her* being or having.

Without *our* being or having.

After *your* being or having.

Through *their* being or having.

My having been or having had etc.

Her writing such a letter will oblige him very much.

Their having called upon her, prevented *her* coming to them.

L'esser io or *l'aver io*.

Dell'esser tu or *dell'aver tu*.

All'esser egli or *all'aver egli*.

Dall'esser ella or *dall'aver ella*.

Senza esser noi or *senza aver noi*.

Dopo esser voi or *dopo aver voi*.

Per esser eglino or *per aver eglino*.

L'essere io stato or *l'aver io avuto*, etc.

Lo scriver ella una tal lettera l'obbligherà assai.

L'esser essi passati da lei, impedì *il venir essa da loro*.

EXERCISE 8.

Cæsar gave the throne of Egypt to Cleopatra, and
Cesare diede Egitto —
 removed her brother from it — His having been so prudent
allontanò sì
 and courageous was the cause of the victory — Does your
fu =
 wife know my misfortune?—I can do what I like with my
sa posso ciò che voglio (Gen.)
 own money — My father, mother and brothers are in the
(Dat.)
 country with your friends and their children — My cousin
campagna bambino
 is gone to visit and console his sister, who has lost her
andato a perduto
 dear little child — Have you any news of your parents? No,
 =
 but I expect some from my (mother-in-law) by the post
aspetto suocera per posta
 — She esteems her (son-in-law) as much as he hates his
stima genero odia
 (daughter-in-law) — Their (nephew's son) and our (grand
nuora pronipote nipote
 sons) are all ill: this news pierces my heart — A friend of
tino stanno spezza
 their's (lost at cards) last night all his property — Her dear
si giuocò
 little niece (will come) here with my (sister-in-law) — Pe-
nipote verrà cognata
 ter (being afraid) for his own life (laid the fault) on his
temendo (Gen.) incolpò (Acc.)
 (great grand father) — Whose is this little dog? It is our's
bisavo
 —Do me the favour to present this petition to his Majesty.
di

We Italians and especially the Tuscans, in speaking or writing to a Superior, a Lady, or Gentleman, make use of the feminine gender and of the third person; viz. *La Signoria Vostra*, or *Vosignoria*, Your Lordship or Ladyship, for which *Ella* is substituted in the following manner (1).

		<i>Pers. Pron.</i>	<i>Conjunctive.</i>
Nom.	<i>You (Madame, or Sir)</i>	<i>Ella</i>	
Gen.	<i>Of you</i>	<i>Di lei</i>	
Dat.	<i>To you</i>	<i>A lei</i>	<i>Le.</i>
Acc.	<i>You</i>	<i>Lei</i>	<i>La.</i>
Abl.	<i>From you</i>	<i>Da lei</i>	
Nom.	<i>You (Gentlemen)</i>	<i>Lor Signori</i>	
Gen.	<i>Of you</i>	<i>Di lor Signori</i>	
Dat.	<i>To you</i>	<i>A lor Signori</i>	
Acc.	<i>You</i>	<i>Lor Signori</i>	<i>Li, or Gli.</i>
Abl.	<i>From you</i>	<i>Da lor Signori</i>	
Nom.	<i>You (Ladies)</i>	<i>Lor Signore</i>	
Gen.	<i>Of you</i>	<i>Di lor Signore</i>	
Dat.	<i>To you</i>	<i>A lor Signore</i>	
Acc.	<i>You</i>	<i>Lor Signore</i>	<i>Le.</i>
Abl.	<i>From you</i>	<i>Da lor Signore</i>	

(1) Dante, Petrarch, Boccaccio, Goldoni, and many other good Authors never use *Ella* to evince respect, but always *Voi*.

Dante in speaking with veneration to one of his ancestors, says

« *Dal voi che prima Roma sofferire*

.....

Ricominciaron le parole mie.

Io cominciai: voi siete il padre mio,

Voi mi date a parlar tutta baldezza

Voi mi levate sì ch'io son più ch'io. »

Petrarch, who always addresses Laura respectfully, says

V'aggio proferto il cor, ma a Voi non piace.

Many other examples in corroboration might be adduced from the best authorities. Nevertheless we give the following Exercise on this rule.

According to this mode of addressing persons, *le signorie loro*, may be used both for *Gentlemen*, and *Ladies*.

The verb is to be put in the third person; as, *Come sta Signore*, or *Signora*, or for both *Ella*? How do you do Sir or Madam? *Come stanno le Signorie loro*? How do you do, Gentlemen or Ladies?

The *adjective* and *participle* agree with the title: as, *È ella sodisfatta*? Are you (Sir or Madam) satisfied?

Your, having reference to one person, is expressed by *il suo*, *la sua* etc. relating to two or more persons, by *il loro*, *la loro*: as, *Signora ho letto i suoi comandi*, Madam I have read your orders—*Signori la loro stima mi è di un gran pregio*, Gentlemen your esteem is of great value to me.

EXERCISE 9.

I heard that you fell from your horse and hurt your
intesi *cadde* =
 head — If you do not go to your cousin's, she (will come)
 = *andrà* (*Abl.*) *verrà*
 to you — We saw you (this morning) with some friends
 (*Abl.*) *Abbiamo veduta stamane*
 of your's — Lord Listowel has heard things which
 — — *udito* *che*
 (will fill) your heart with joy — Why this indulgence to
innonderanno (*Gen.*)
 your nephew? You spend your property to gratify his
spende *per aggradire* (*Dat.*)
 ridiculous pride — You lost your cause through your
orgoglio *ha perso* *lite*
 refusing to show those papers — Miss Wells wished that
ricusare di — *volle*
 your books (should be) returned to you — My brothers and
fossero

your sisters went there together — Mrs. Bonsor told me
andarono — *disse*
 that (at last) you have received letters from your relations,
finalmente
 and I participate in your joy — Remember me to your
vengo a parte (*Gen.*) *Riverisca* (*Acc.*)
 father and sisters.

LESSON X.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Are those which precisely point out the subjects to which they relate, and shew the time and place.

They are of three classes.

The first class is composed of those which indicate the proximity of an object to the person who speaks: as, *Questo libro*, This book.

The second class of those which indicate the proximity of an object to the person spoken to: as, *Codesto libro*, That book.

The third class comprehends those which indicate the object equally distant both from the person spoken to, and person speaking: as, *Quel libro*, That book.

We present them arranged in their respective classes.

3d. Class.

2d. Class.

1st. Class.

Mas. sing. Fem. sing.	Mas. plur. Fem. plur.	Mas. sing. Fem. sing.	Mas. plur. Fem. plur.	1st. Class.		2d. Class.		3d. Class.	
				<i>This man or This person</i>	<i>That man or That person</i>	<i>That man or That person</i>	<i>That man or That person</i>	<i>That man or That person</i>	<i>That man or That person</i>
Questi	Queste	Questo	Queste	Cotesti	Cotesti	Quegli	Quegli	Quel or quello (1)	Quel or quello (1)
Costui	Costei	Costui	Costei	Codesto, cotesto Codesta, cotesta	Codesti, cotesti Codeste, coteste	Quella	Quella	Quelli, quegli quei, or que', Quelle	Quelli, quegli quei, or que', Quelle
Costoro	Costoro	Costoro	Costoro	Cotestui Cotestei	Cotestui Cotestei	Colori Colori	Colori Colori	Colori Colori	Colori Colori
Costoro	Costoro	Costoro	Costoro	Costoro (obsol.)	Costoro (obsol.)	Colori	Colori	Colori	Colori

*This or that (thing)
What (thing).*

For each Class unvaried.

(1) In the singular, *quello* is used at the end of a phrase, and before an *s impura*, or a *z*; *quell'* before a vowel; *quel* before a noun masculine beginning with a simple consonant.

In the plural, *quegli* is used before a vowel, an *s impura*, or a *z*, *quei* or *que'*, before any other consonant, *quelli* at the end of a phrase.

None of these pronouns take the definite article, but are governed by the particles *di*, *a*, *da*: as, *Per la dolce memoria di quel giorno*, For the pleasing remembrance of that day.

Questi, *Cotesti* and *Quegli* refer to a person, and are used only in the nominative singular of the masculine gender: as, *Questi è il mio maestro*, *cotesti mio padre*, *e quegli mio cugino*, *This man is my master*, *that man is my father*, and *that person my cousin*.

Questo, *Cotesto* and *Quello* are applied to things as well as persons, and are used adjectively with substantives as well as by themselves.

EXAMPLES.

Questo vestito mi è troppo lungo. *This coat is too long for me.*

Cotesto vestito vi sta bene. *That coat fits you well.*

Quella casa è bellissima. *That house is very fine.*

Stasera andremo a questo teatro, domani sera a quello. *This evening we will go to this theatre, to-morrow evening to that.*

Stamane, stamattina, This morning — *Stasera*, This evening — *Stanotte*, To night, are contractions of *questa mane*, *questa mattina*; *questa sera*; *questa notte*.

This friend of mine — *That book of your's* etc. are expressed by *Questo mio amico*, *Cotesto vostro libro* etc.

NB. *He*, *She* and *They*, followed by a relative pronoun, are rendered either by *chi* alone, with the verb in the singular, or by *colui che*; *colei che*; *coloro che*.

EXAMPLES.

He who loves virtue etc. *Colui che or chi ama la virtù* etc.

She who was the cause of it will be punished. *Colei che or chi ne fu la causa, sarà punita or punito.*

They who live in affluence forget the miseries of others. *Coloro che vivono nell'abbondanza dimenticano le miserie degli altri, or chi vive etc. dimentica etc.*

Costui, Costei, Costoro denote proximity to the person who speaks, as the pronoun *questi*, but they are used in all relations of the noun with the verb.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Quando vidi costui nel gran deserto.</i>	<i>When I saw this man in the great desert.</i>
<i>Così costei ch'è tra le donne un sole.</i>	<i>So this one who is a sun amongst women.</i>
<i>Deh ferma il guardo a rimirar costoro!</i>	<i>Now fix your eye and admire these persons.</i>

Colui, Colei, Coloro denote distance both from the person who speaks and the person spoken to, and are the same as *quegli*, but used in the same manner as the three e.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Io ho assai con una colpa offeso gl' Iddii uccidendo colui.</i>	<i>I have sufficiently offended the Gods by the single crime of killing that man.</i>
<i>Questa è colei che tanto è posta in croce pur da color che le dovrian dar lode.</i>	<i>This is that (fortune) who is so contemned even by those persons who ought to praise her.</i>

Costui, Costei, Costoro — *Colui, Colei, Coloro* are elegantly used in the genitive case governed by a noun without *di*: as, *La costui professione*, The profession of this man — *Al colei grido*, At the call of that female.

This, That, meaning *this thing, that thing*, are expressed by *questo, ciò; codesto, quello*: as, What means *this*? *Che vuol dir questo?* — *That* which you say is not to be believed, *Cotesto che voi dite non è da credersi* — Do not speak to him of *that* — *Non gli parlate di ciò*.

Questo, preceded by the preposition *in* or *a*, often indicates the present time with reference to some substantive understood: as, *In questo ella sopravvenne*, At this (moment) she came up — *A questo mi hanno condotto*, To this (point) they have conducted me.

The former in Italian is rendered by *quello, quella* etc. and *the latter*, by *questo, questa* etc. as, Religion and superstition have very different effects on the human mind, *the former* strengthens it, but *the latter* renders it feeble, *La religione e la superstizione producono differenti effetti nella mente umana, quella la rinvigorisce, ma questa la rende debole*.

What, used independently without reference to a substantive, and meaning *what thing*, is expressed by *che* (*cosa* understood): as, I do not know *what* to think, *Non so che pensare*.

EXERCISE 10.

The virtues which the Persians (carefully inspired),
Persiano avevano cura d'inspirare
 were truth and goodness, sobriety and obedience, the two
 =
 former make us resemble the Gods, the two latter
fanno (Dat.) =
 are necessary for the preservation of order — He who
conservazione

can moderate his passions is very happy. — That Lady
può *Signora*

whom you saw this morning is the wife of that man
cui avete veduta

who deceived you — This cloth is finer than it seems
ingannò panno pare

— He who is too indulgent to himself, has generally less
troppo

forbearance for others — Rome and Florence are interest-
compiacenza

ing cities, the former for its historical recollections, the
ricordanza

latter for having been the seat of the fine arts — The
essere stata sede

manners of that man do not please that woman whom
 = *piacciono (Dat.)* *cui*
5 2

he pretends to love so much. — Those persons deceive
pretende di *ingannano*

1 2 1
 themselves who think that happiness consists in riches —
pensano = (Inf.)

She came to me this morning, and perhaps (will return)
è venuta (Abl.) *ritornerà*

2 1
 this evening — Those stockings of your's are not of the
 quality you told me — His bad manners have brought
che *hanno condotto*

him to this end. — That which you told him (was not to
non era da

be said) — The man whom you see speaking with that
dirsi *vedete (Inf.)*

4
 Lady is my uncle — I cannot imagine what this brother of
non posso

1 2 5
 your's means to say.
intenda di

LESSON XI.

RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

RELATIVE.

Are such as relate, in general, to some word or phrase going before, which is thence called the *antecedent*.

Sing. Mas.	Sing. Fem.	Pl. Mas.	Pl. Fem.	Inv. of both numb.
Nom. Il quale	La quale	I quali	Le quali	Che
Gen. Del quale	Della quale	Dei quali	Delle quali	Di cui, di che, onde
Dat. Al quale	Alla quale	Ai quali	Alle quali	A cui, a che
Acc. Il quale	La quale	I quali	Le quali	Cui, che
Abl. Dal quale	Dalla quale	Dai quali	Dalle quali	Da cui, da che, onde
<i>Invariable</i> {				<i>Which</i> <i>That which, What.</i>
				<i>Who, which, that</i> <i>Of whom, whose, of which</i> <i>To whom, to which</i> <i>Whom, which, that</i> <i>From whom, by which.</i>

Il quale, la quale etc. and their variations, are applied both to persons and things: as, *L'uomo il quale vedeste*, The man *whom* you saw — *I libri de' quali vi parlai*, The books *of which* I spoke to you.

Che, unvaried, serves for all cases in both numbers and genders, and is applied to persons as well as things. In its oblique cases it takes the prepositions *di, a, da*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Gli autori che leggete.</i>	The authors <i>which</i> you read.
<i>Questa è la casa che tanto mi piace.</i>	This is the house <i>which</i> I like so much.
<i>Gli occhi di che io parlai sì caldamente.</i>	The eyes <i>of which</i> I spoke with so much ardour.

Cui is as unvaried as *che*, and serves for all cases (except the nominative), whatever may be their number or gender, and has reference to persons as well as things: as, *E caddi come l'uom cui sonno piglia*, And I fell as a man *whom* sleep over-takes — *I libri di cui mi parlaste?* The books *of which* you spoke to me?

The word *che* is sometimes liable to error, as in the following example, *È morto il servo che amava mio padre*. We cannot clearly see, if the love is on the part *of the servant* with respect to *the father*, or on the part *of the father* with respect to *the servant*. It would be better then to say, *È morto il servo cui amava mio padre*, The servant, *whom* my father loved, is dead.

It is employed in the genitive and dative case without a preposition. In the genitive, it is placed between the article and the noun on which it depends, and in the dative, it precedes the verb: as, *Il cui sapere*, Whose knowledge — *Voi, cui natura diede tanto coraggio*, You to *whom* nature gave so much courage.

Onde is employed in poetry and also in elevated diction in the sense of *del quale, pel quale, col quale, dal quale* etc. and in the plural of both genders: as, *Penso alle sue disgrazie ond' egli con ragione piange*, I think of his misfortunes *for which* he weeps with reason.

What or *Which*, having reference to a substantive, always precedes it, (an exception to the general rule of relative pronouns) and is expressed by *che* or *quale*, but *quale* cannot be used in a phrase of admiration: as, I do not know *what* book I shall read, *Non so che or qual libro leggerò* — *What* a fine picture! *Che bel quadro!*

What, meaning *that which*, is expressed by *ciò che* or *quel che*; as, I know *what* you said to her, *So ciò che or quel che le diceste*.

When a sentence is the *antecedent*, *which* is expressed by *il che* or *la qual cosa*: as, I have not yet met with the books I want, *which* hinders me from finishing that work, *Non ho ancora trovato i libri di cui abbisogno, il che or la qual cosa m'impedisce di terminare quell' opera*.

NB. A relative pronoun is always expressed in Italian, and never omitted as in English: as, *I libri cui compraste*, The books you bought.

INTERROGATIVES.

Are used in asking questions.

	Chi?	Who?
Nom. }	Quale, quali?	{ Which? What?
	Che? or che cosa?	
	Di chi?	Of whom? Whose?
Gen. }	Di quale, di quali?	{ Of Which? Of what?
	Di che? or di che cosa?	

mer whose beautiful face you ²admire so much — They
viso ammirate cotanto

cannot come either to-day or to-morrow, which (will
non possono nè nè sarà
 be) the cause of much expense — The man whose
dispendio

conduct is regular, and whose actions are honest, is hap-
condotta

pier than he who abandons himself to his inclinations —
abbandona

What are your pastimes in that wretched house?
passatempo misero

We play at cards. How much did you lose last night?
si gioca perdeste ieri

Not much, but who is more unlucky than I? — There are
 occasions when silence is preferable to words —
in cui discorso (sing.)

What a destiny! Under what an unfortunate star I (was born!)
nacqui

— Fashion is a tyrant whose laws and caprices (it is necessary)
conviene

to follow — Here is the youth whom you heard sing
 = *udiste*

last evening, and whose voice is so sweet — Send me
mandate

the letters you have written — Whom shall we believe?
scritte (Dat.) crederemo

— In what do they employ their time? — Of what does
impiegano =

he accuse his friend? — The letter in which you have
accusa

found that note is not mine.
trovato biglietto

LESSON XII.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Are those which express their subjects in an indefinite or general manner.

Altri (Nom. sing. only)	}	<i>Any one, some one,</i>
<i>Gen. d' altrui, Dat. ad altrui.</i>		<i>Another, Somebody else,</i>
<i>Acc. altrui, Abl. da altrui.</i>		<i>Other people.</i>
Altro, altra; altri, altre.		<i>Other, Others.</i>
L' uno e l' altro, l' una e l' altra; gli uni e gli altri, le une e le altre; ambedue, ambo, tutti e due, tutte e due.	}	<i>Both.</i>
L' un l' altro, l' una l' altra; gli uni gli altri, le une le altre.		<i>Each other, One another.</i>
L' uno o l' altro, l' una o l' altra; gli uni o gli altri, le une o le altre.	}	<i>Either the one or the other. One or other.</i>
Nè l' uno nè l' altro, nè l' una nè l' altra; nè gli uni nè gli altri, nè le une nè le altre.		<i>Neither the one nor the other.</i>
Per uno.		<i>Each.</i>
Alcuno, alcuna; alcuni, alcune.		<i>Some, any.</i>
Qualcheduno, qualcheduna; qual- cuno, qualcuna.	}	<i>Somebody, Some one, Any one.</i>
Nessuno, nessuna; veruno, veru- na; niuno, niuna; nullo, nulla; neppur uno, neppur una.		<i>No body, No one. Not one, Not any.</i>

Invariable.

Qualche
Nulla, niente

Some, Any.
Nothing.

Altri is the Nominative singular of a distinct pronoun making *altrui* in its oblique cases: as, *Altri dice il contrario e non s'inganna*, Some one says the contrary, and does not deceive himself — *Che mena dritto altrui per ogni calle*, Which (the sun understood) leads others straight thro' every path.

Altrui is employed in the genitive and dative cases (like *cui*) with or without a preposition. In the genitive it is to be put between the article and the substantive on which it depends: as, *Pensò cogli altrui danni raffreddare il suo fervente amore*, He thought by injuring others to cool his own fervent love — *Non fare ad altrui quel che non vuoi per te*, Do not to others that which thou would'st not like thyself.

L' altrui, used substantively, means *the property of others*: as, *Io non invidio mai l' altrui*, I never covet the property of others.

Altro or *Altra* is joined with the personal pronouns *Noi* and *Voi* in an expletive manner for the sake of emphasis: as, *Noi altri Inglesi (mas.) Noi altre Inglesi (fem.)* We English — *Voi altri Italiani (mas.) Voi altre Italiane (fem.)* You Italians.

Altro, substantively employed, conveys the meaning of *some thing else, any thing else*; but when repeated in the same sentence, the repetition signifies *one thing. . . another thing, or two different things*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Non ho bisogno d' altro.</i>	I do not want <i>any thing else</i> .
<i>Altro è il parlar di morte, altro il morire.</i>	It is <i>one thing</i> to talk of death, and <i>another</i> to die.

NB. When *Altro* is followed by *che* in a negative sentence, it means *nothing but, except or otherwise*: as,

}

Ciò non può esservi altro che utile, That cannot be otherwise than useful to you.

L'uno e l'altro, whatever article or preposition may be employed with *uno*, must be repeated with *altro*, and when it is in the Nominative case, the verb must be in the singular: as, *Ho ricevuto lettere dall' uno e dall' altro*, I have received letters from both — *L' uno e l' altro mi odia*, Both hate me.

L'un l'altro, invariably used with a reflexive verb, is always in the accusative case with *altro* sometimes in the genitive, or governed by a preposition: as, *Essi si odiano l'un l'altro, e per conseguenza sono invidiosi l'un dell' altro*, They hate each other and consequently are envious one of the other.

L' uno o l' altro — *Per uno*, have no peculiarity to notice: Ex. *Nè il padre nè il figlio è venuto, ma l' uno o l' altro verrà dimani*, Neither the father nor the son have come, but one or the other will come to-morrow — *Diedi loro due soldi per uno*, I gave them two pence each.

Nè l'uno nè l'altro requires a negative particle, when placed after a verb, but not when placed before: as, *Nè l'uno nè l'altro merita lode*, or *non merita lode nè l'uno nè l'altro*. Neither the one nor the other merits praise.

In all these cases *uno*, *altro*, vary their gender and number according to the substantives to which they have reference: as, *Vidi il padre e la figlia, ma nè l'uno nè l'altra volle riconoscermi*, I saw the father and the daughter, but neither of them would recognize me.

Some one, *Some* and *Any*, referring to an antecedent in the plural, are rendered by *qualcheduno* or *qualcuno* in the singular, or by *alcuno* in the plural, and agree with the antecedent in gender: as, I have visited the

officers, and have found some of them wounded, *Ho visitato gli uffiziali, e ne ho trovato qualcuno ferito, or alcuni feriti.*

Some, Any, joined adjectively to a substantive, are expressed by *qualche* in the singular or by *alcuno* in the plural: as, You must take *some* books, *Bisogna che prendiate qualche libro, or alcuni libri.*

Nessuno, Niuno, Veruno, Nullo, require the negative *non* when they follow the verb, but not when they precede it: as, *Nessuno è più infelice di lui, ma non vidi mai nessuno più rassegnato di lui*, No one is more unfortunate than he is, but I never saw any one more resigned (than he is).

The same pronouns used after a verb without a negative, in phrases expressing something *doubtful or conditional*, signify *any, or any body*: as, *Avete veduto nessuno?* Have you seen *any body*? But it will be better to say, *Avete veduto qualcuno?*

Nè pur uno, placed after the verb, requires a negative, but not when before it: as, *Nè pur uno venne*, or *non venne nè pur uno*, Not one came.

Niente and *Nulla* come under the same rule with respect to the negative, as also in *conditional or doubtful* expressions without a negative: as, *Nulla mi fa sperare*, Nothing makes me hope — *Non mi disse niente*, He told me nothing — *Non so nulla*, I do not know any thing — *Volete nulla?* Will you have any thing? In this last example it will be better to say: *Volete qualche cosa?*

Adjectives following *niente* take *di*: as, *Niente di buono nè di cattivo*, Nothing good or bad.

Nullo, meaning *null or void*, is a mere adjective and makes in the plural *nulli, nulle*: as, *Quelle leggi furono rese nulle*, Those laws were rendered *null*.

EXERCISE 12.

I know neither of your nephews, but I know both
conosco *so che*
 serve in the same regiment — If any person knew that
serve *sapesse*

you have not kept your word, you would not be
mantenuto *saresti*

³believed ²by any one again — Your cousin and your sister
creduto *più*

¹promised ¹me to come, but I do not believe either of
promisero *credo*
 them, altho' both deserve credit — If your brothers
meriti *fede*

keep the secret, I have promised them ten guineas
mantengono *promesso*
 each — I have seen your son's books, but I have found
 some of them forbidden — Do you know any thing of
proibito

that affair? I do not know any thing, except that no one
 excuses your son — Have you received any letters?
scusa *ricevuto*

²Not one of the many ¹I ³expected — We ²should ¹never
aspettava *dobbiamo*
 speak ill of others, nor of any thing belonging to them —
dir

Nothing was seen except sky and water — Any one
si vedeva

knows your intention, he said, but I answered
conosce *disse* *risposi*
 him, that it is one thing to pretend to know and another
 (Dat.)

to know truly — She neither says nor does any thing
dice fa
 well — They have seen those plants, and they have
buono pianta
 found some which have not (taken root) — The orders of
alignato
 the general were void, for no soldier would fight —
perchè volle battersi
² ¹
 It is not always well to act (according to) the wishes of
l'agire secondo voglia
 others.

LESSON XIII.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS CONTINUED.

Sing. Only.

Ciascheduno, ciascheduna.	{ Every one,
Ciascuno, ciascuna.	{ Each, Every.
Ognuno, ognuna.	Every one, Every body.
Taluno, taluna, chi.	Some one, Some body.

Sing. and Plur.

Tutto, tutta; tutti, tutte.	All, Whole.
Quanto, quanta; quanti, quante.	As much as; As many as.
Tanto, tanta; tanti, tante.	So much as; So many as.

Of both Genders.

Qualsisia, qualsisiano.	{ Whatsoever,
Qualsivoglia, qualsivogliano.	{ Any . . . Whatever.
Tale.	Such.
Tale che, tale . . . quale	Such as.
Parecchi, parecchie.	Several.

Invariable.

Ogni.	<i>Each, Every.</i>
Chiunque, chicchessia.	<i>Whoever, Whosoever.</i>
Cicchessia, checchè, per, per quanto.	{ <i>Whatever, Whatsoever.</i>
Qualunque, qualunque cosa.	
	<i>Whatever.</i>

Ciascuno abbreviated from *Ciascheduno*, employed substantively, refers to persons only: *adjectively* used, it is applied both to persons and things.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ciascuno disse il suo parere.</i>	<i>Every one spoke his opinion.</i>
<i>Ciascun soldato si battè con valore.</i>	<i>Each soldier fought with valour.</i>
<i>Ciascun albero comincia a spuntar le foglie.</i>	<i>Every tree begins to put forth leaves.</i>

Ognuno, Chiunque, Chicchessia are used substantively and are applied to persons only: as, *Ognuno di noi racconterà una novella*, *Every one* of us will tell a tale — *Chiunque parlerà di lei. . .* *Whoever* will speak of her. . . *Non mi curo di chicchessia*, I do not care for *any person whatever*.

Taluno is used substantively referring to persons only: as, *Se taluno mi dicesse una sola parola. . .* If *some one* would tell me a single word....

Chi is taken in a distributive sense: as, *Passeggiavano per le strade portando chi fiori, chi erbe odorifere, e chi diverse cose*, They walked about the streets *some* carrying in their hands flowers, *some* sweet herbs, and *others* different things.

Tutto is used substantively in the sense of *every body*: as, *Tutti pensavano così*, *All* thought so — *Era*

piaciuta a tutti la novella della Fiammetta, They have all been pleased with the tale of Fiametta.

With or without the article, it is used substantively in the sense of *whole* or *every thing*.

EXAMPLES.

Ne so il tutto.

I know the *whole* of it.

Ella rispose e raccontò il tutto.

She answered and told *every thing*.

Il Signor Fenton farà di tutto per compiacervi.

Mr. Fenton will do *every thing* to satisfy you.

La Contessa S. è il tutto a Corte.

The Countess S. is *every thing* at Court.

It is used as an adjective with the article after it: as, *Alla Signora Wells la cura di tutta la nostra famiglia commetto*, I intrust to Mrs. Wells the care of *all* our family.

As an adjective it is used also with personal pronouns in the plural: as, *Noi tutti* or *tutti noi*, All of us — *Voi tutte* or *tutte voi*, All of you.

It is used as an adverb in the sense of *quite*, *entirely*, agreeing with the following noun: as, *La donna tutta furiosa rispose*, The Lady replied *quite* in a rage — *Egli era tutto pallido*, He was *quite* pale.

Tutto, joined with *quanto*, signifies *all* without exception: as, *Tutte quante dormivano*, They were *all* of them asleep — *Tutti quanti perirono*, *Every one* of them perished.

Qualunque, *Qualsisia* etc. are applied both to persons and things: as, *Qualunque donna lo dice*, *Whatever* lady says so — *Qualunque dolore ei provi, non posso giovargli*, *Whatever* grief he suffers, I can be of no use to him.

Checchessia or *Checchè* is used by itself: as, *Checchessia il suo ragionamento non mi persuaderà mai*, *Whatever* may be his argument, he will never persuade me.

Whatever, *However*, are expressed by *per* when an adjective follows: as, *However* rich he may be I am not afraid of him, *Per ricco che sia nol temo*.

Tale is often used for *one* or *some*: as, *Tale venne in figura del Re di Francia*, *tale del Re d'Inghilterra*, *One* came in the disguise of the king of France, *one* in that of the king of England.

It is used as a relative pronoun, when it refers to something which has been said before: as, *Tale fu mia cruda sorte*, *Such* was my cruel lot.

It is often joined with another pronoun signifying *particular*, *same*, *said*: as, *Non ho ancora veduto quei tali libri*, I have not seen *those (said)* books.

It is used adjectively like *such*: as, *Tale fu la mia intenzione*, *Such* was my intention.

It is used alone having a substantive understood, such as *affanno*, tribulation; *dolore*, affliction; something disastrous being always meant: as, *A tal m' ha condotto mia cruda sorte*, *To such a plight* has my cruel lot conducted me.

Ogni is invariable in both genders and is only employed in the singular: as, *Ogni uomo* — *Ogni città* — *Ogni campo*, *Every man* — *Every city* — *Every field*.

The following expressions *Every other day* — *Every third day* — *Every fortnight*, are rendered by *Ogni due giorni* — *Ogni tre giorni* — *Ogni quindici giorni*, and are not exceptions, because *spazio di*, space of, is to be understood.

The other pronouns have no peculiarity deserving of notice.

EXERCISE 13.

When all had finished, every one went home —
ebbero finito andò (Dat.)

My confidence is ¹ placed in that man who ² loves all my
posta ama

family so much — They came home quite hot, and
(Dat.) sudato

spoke to no one — When the son heard the father
parlarono udì

say « all is known to me » he said nothing more — All
noto rispose

of them remained under those ruins — Each one related
rimasero raccontò

a tale, and every eighth day, they assembled in that same
si ragunarono

spot — All your care will be useless, because every
luogo sarà

one believes him guilty — Whoever comes, tell him
crede reo venga

I am not at home — If you come to-morrow, you
in verrete

(will find) me at any hour — Whatever he may say, do
troverete dica

not ¹ listen to him, because he is such a violent person,
date retta

that he makes every body mad, and on his account
fa impazzare per causa

I am now brought to such a plight — Whatever your
giunto

³ riches ¹ (may be), ³ you ¹ will ⁴ never ³ persuade ² him
siano indurrete

(to do as you wish) — However poor I (may be), I do not
al vostro volere *sia* =
 want him — Lady Seymour is a Lady whom I
ho bisogno (Gen.) — — *Signora*
² ¹
 have found exactly such as Mr. Reynolds has described
trovata appunto — *descritta*
³ ⁴ ¹ ²
 her to me: if you go (to her house) some evening, you
andrete da lei
 (will find) several of your friends there.
troverete

VERB.

A Verb is a part of speech which signifies *existing, acting or sustaining* an action. It has *persons, moods and tenses*.

Verbs have two numbers, the singular and the plural, and three persons, which have already been explained in the personal pronouns. It must be remembered that all substantives, either proper or common are of the third person, when not addressed or spoken to.

There are four Moods in the Conjugation of Verbs. viz.

1. The *Infinitive Mood* affirms in an indefinite manner without either number or person: as, *Amare*, To love—*Aver amato*, To have loved.

2. The *Indicative Mood* simply indicates and asserts a thing in a direct manner: as, *Io amo*, I love.

3. The *Imperative Mood* is used for commanding,

exhorting, requesting or reproving: as, *Ama*, Love (thou) — *Amiamo*, Let us love.

4. The *Subjunctive Mood* subjects a thing to that which precedes: as, *Voi volete ch' egli ami*, You wish he may love.

There are three tenses. The *present* declares a thing now existing or doing: as, *Io leggo*, I read. The *past* denotes that the thing has been done: as, *Io ho letto*, I have read. The *future* expresses that the thing will be done: as, *Io leggerò*, I shall read. But they are subdivided, so that there are several different preterite and two future tenses.

There are five kinds of Verbs. The *active*; *passive*; *intransitive* or *neuter*; *reflective* or *pronominal*, and *impersonal*.

The *Verb active* is that which expresses an action, the object of which is either declared or understood: as, *Amar Dio*, To love God — *Amar lo studio*, To love study. The object of this action is called *regimen* or *accusative* of the Verb Active.

In the Italian Language the *Passive Verbs* are supplied by the Verb *Essere*, as they are in English by the verb *To be*, and the participle past of the verb active followed by one of the particles of the Ablative, viz. *da*, *dal*, *dallo*, *dalla*: *dai*, *dagli*, *dalle*, the Nominative and Accusative being reversed. Thus to change the Verb from active to passive in the following sentence, *Mio padre vi ama*, My father loves you, it must be rendered thus, *Voi siete amato da mio padre*, You are loved by my father.

The *Verb Intransitive* is that which expresses an action whose effect remains in the subject or nominative, consequently it has no direct *regimen* or *Accusative* as the Verb active: as *Andare*, To go — *Piacere*, To please, is likewise an intransitive Verb; we cannot say in Italian *Piacere qualcheduno*, but *Piacere a qualcheduno*, To please somebody.

The *Pronominal* or *Reflective Verbs* are those in which each person is conjugated throughout all the tenses with its corresponding conjunctive personal pronoun in the accusative case.

EXAMPLES.

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Io mi pento</i> I repent.	<i>Noi ci pentiamo</i> We repent.
<i>Tu ti penti</i> Thou repentest.	<i>Voi vi pentite</i> You repent.
<i>Egli si pente</i> He repents.	<i>Egolino si pentono</i> They repent.

The *Impersonal Verb* is only used in the third person singular without a pronoun, and has no relation to any person or thing beyond itself: as, *Nevica*, It snows — *Tuona*, It thunders.

There are three Conjugations in Italian which are easily distinguished by the termination of the Present of the Infinitive.

The first	}	ending in	{	are — as,	AMARE,	To love.
— second				ere — »	TEMERE,	To fear.
— third				ire — »	SENTIRE,	To feel.

There are two auxiliary Verbs: *Avere*, To have, and *Essere*, To be.

CONJUGATIONS OF THE AUXILIARY VERBS

AVERE, *To have* AND ESSERE, *To be*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

Avère, To have

Éssere, To be (1)

GERUND.

Avéndo, Having

Esséndo, Being

PARTICIPLE PAST.

Avúto, Had

Státo, Been (2)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I have etc.

I am etc.

Io ho

Io sóno

Tu hai

Tu séi

Egli ha

Egli è

Noi abbiámo

Noi siámo

Voi avéte

Voi siéte

Eglino hánno

Eglino sóno

(1) The reader must observe that the compound tenses of the verb *Essere* are not formed, as in English, by the help of *Avere, To have*, but of *Essere, To be*. So that instead of saying, *I have been, I had been* etc. the Italians say — *I am been, I was been, Sono stato, era stato*.

(2) *Stato* agrees in gender and number with the nominative: as, *Io (a man) sono stato, Io (a woman) sono stata, Noi (men) siamo stati, Noi (women) siamo state*.

IMPERFECT.

I had etc.	I was etc.
Io avéva	Io éra
Tu avévi	Tu éri
Egli avéva	Egli éra
Noi avevámo	Noi eravámo
Voi aveváte	Voi eraváte
Eglino avévano	Eglino érano

PRETERITE.

I had etc.	I was etc.
Io ébbi	Io fúi
Tu avésti	Tu fósti
Egli ébbe	Egli fù
Noi avémmo	Noi fúmmo
Voi avéste	Voi fóste
Eglino ébbero	Eglino fúrono

FUTURE.

I shall or will have etc.	I shall or will be etc.
Io avrò	Io sarò
Tu avrái	Tu sarái
Egli avrà	Egli sarà
Noi avrémo	Noi sarémo
Voi avréte	Voi saréte
Eglino avránno	Eglino saránno

CONDITIONAL.

I should have etc.	I should be etc.
Io avréi	Io saréi
Tu avrésti	Tu sarésti
Egli avrébbe	Egli sarébbe

Noi avrémmo
Voi avréste
Eglino avrébbero

Noi sarémmo
Voi saréste
Eglino sarébbero

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

Have thou etc.

Be thou etc.

Abbi tu
Abbia egli
Abbiámo noi
Abbiáte voi
Abbiano eglino

Sii tu
Sia egli
Siámo noi
Siáte voi
Siano *or* sieno eglino

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may have etc.

That I may be etc.

Che io ábbia
Che tu ábbi
Ch'egli ábbia
Che noi abbiámo
Che voi abbiáte
Ch'eglino ábbiano

Che io sía
Che tu síi
Ch'egli sía
Che noi siámo
Che voi siáte
Ch'eglino síano *or* sieno

IMPERFET.

That I might have etc.

That I might be etc.

Che io avéssi
Che tu avéssi
Ch'egli avésse
Che noi avéssimo
Che voi avéste
Ch'eglino avéssero

Che io fóssi
Che tu fóssi
Ch'egli fósse
Che noi fóssimo
Che voi fóste
Ch'eglino fóssero

INFLEXIONS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

Amare, To love.

<i>Infín. Mood.</i>	{	PRESENT ends in			âre			
		GERUND			ândo			
		PARTICIPLE			âto			
Singular.					Plural.			
<i>Indicative Mood.</i>	{		1st pers.	2d pers.	3d pers.	1st pers.	2d pers.	3d pers.
		PRES. ends in o	i	a	iâmo	âte	ano	
		IMPERF. ...	áva	âvi	áva	avâmo	avâte	âvano
		PRETER. ...	âi	âsti	ò	âmmo	âste	ârono
		FUTURE. ...	erò	erâi	erà	erêmo	erête	erânno
		CONDIT. ...	eréi	erésti	erébbe	erémmo	eréste	erébbero
		Imperative ...	—	a	i	iâmo	âte	ino
<i>Subj. Mood.</i>	{	PRESENT....	i	i	i	iâmo	iâte	ino
		IMPERF. ...	âssi	âssi	âsse	âssimo	âste	âssero

The verbs of the first conjugation are both the most numerous and the most regular. They amount to about seven thousand, out of which only four primitive verbs are irregular.

INFLEXIONS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

First Class: as Sentire, To feel.

<i>Infín. Mood.</i>	{	P <small>RESENT</small> ends in	íre					
		G <small>ERUND</small>	éndo					
		P <small>ARTICIPLE</small> . . .	íto					
Singular.			Plural.					
<i>Indicative Mood.</i>	{		1st pers.	2d pers.	3d pers.			
		P <small>RES.</small> ends in	o	i	e	iámo íte ono		
			íva	{	íva	{	ívano	
		I <small>MPERF.</small> ...	or		or		ivámo iváte	or
			ía		ía		íano	
		P <small>RETER.</small> ...	íi	ísti	í	ímmo íste írono		
		F <small>UTURE.</small> ...	irò	irái	irá	irémo iréte iránno		
		C <small>ONDIT.</small> ...	irei	irésti	irébbe	irémmo iréste irèbbero		
		I <small>mperative.</small> ...	—	i	a	iámo íte ano		
		<i>Subj. Mood.</i>	{	P <small>RESENT</small>	a	a	a	iámo iáte ano
I <small>MPERF.</small> ...	íssi			íssi	ísse	íssimo íste íssero		

The most regular form of the third conjugation, according to analogy with the other two, is that of *sentire*: but the verbs thus inflected being very few, it has been found convenient to admit another form, not perfectly analogous, viz. that of *finire*, upon which a considerable number are inflected.

The following are the whole of the regular verbs of the first class of this conjugation, inflected like *sentire* only,

Consentire	<i>To consent</i>	Sentire	<i>To feel</i>
Cucire	<i>To sew</i>	Sdrucire	<i>To rip</i>
Disservire	<i>To disserve</i>	Servire	<i>To serve</i>
Dormire	<i>To sleep</i>	Svestire	<i>To undress</i>
Scucire	<i>To unsew</i>	Vestire	<i>To dress.</i>

REGULAR VERBS.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

Second Class: as Finire, To finish.

Inf. Mood.	{	Singular.		Plural.	
		1st pers.	2d pers.	3d pers.	1st pers. 2d pers. 3d pers.
Indicative Mood.	{	PRES. ends in	ire		
		GERUND	endo		
		PARTICIPLE. . . .	ito		
Subj. Mood.	{				

Verbs conjugated both like *sentire* and *finire*.

The following take the regular inflexions of both classes, making *converto*, or *convertisco*, etc.

Aborrire	Convertire	Pentire	Perire
Dimentire	Forbire	Rinverdire	Riverdire
Inghiottire	Inverdire	Ripentirsi	Rivestire
Investire	Lambire	Smentire	Sortire
Languire	Mentire	Tossire	Travestire
Nutrire	Partire		

All other verbs in *ire*, not in the table of irregular verbs, are conjugated like *finire* only.

EXPLANATIONS

Relating to the Tables of Irregular Verbs.

1. The letter R means regular, and denotes that the tense, where it is placed, is formed like the regular verbs.

2. The letter D means defective: for instance, *solere* has no inflexions in several tenses so marked.

3. Most of these verbs have three persons of the preterite of the indicative irregular; the first person singular ending always in *i* which is changed into *e* for the third person singular, to which the syllable *ro* is added for the third person plural; while the other three persons of that tense follow the regular manner of inflexion from the Infinitive; for this reason, the *first* person singular only is given.

Example in *Accendere*.

Irreg. Io *accēs-i*.

Reg. Tu *accendesti*.

Irreg. Egli *accēs-e*.

Reg. Noi *accendemmo*.

Reg. Voi *accendeste*.

Irreg. Eglino *accēse-ro*.

In other tenses, where the first person singular only is given, all the persons are derived from it according to the regular mode. This applies to each formation when there is more than one, as in *bevo*, *beo*, which have all the persons derived from both, *bevo*, *bevi*, etc. *beo*, *bei*, etc.

Any deviation from these general principles of inflexion is noted in the tables.

4. The compound verbs which differ from their primitives are mentioned; but not those which follow them: for instance, *riandare* and *restare* are noticed as differing from *andare* and *stare*; but *contraffare*, *disfare*, *rifare*; being conjugated like *fare* throughout, are not noticed.

5. A considerable number of verbs have two terminations of their infinitive, and are in consequence inflected in two conjugations; for instance,

Applaudere, *applaudire*, to applaud:

The former is irregular and defective in the second conjugation: but is regularly inflected (in *isco*) in the third, in which it is most used.

Adempiere, *adempire*, to fulfil; *compiere*, *compire*, to complete; take the regular inflexions of the second conjugation, from the one termination, and of the third (in *isco*) from the other.

Amongst the verbs taking both forms of the third conjugation, it is to be observed that *sortire* has its in-

flexions in *isco* when it signifies *to chuse, elect, or share by lot*; and is inflected like *sentire*, when used in a military sense:

I nemici sortono sovente contro di noi,
The enemy frequently sally out against us.

Tossire, to cough — its inflexions in *isco* prevail in conversation, and those in *o* in writing.

6. The irregular verbs of the second and third conjugations assume different modes of inflexion according to the different combinations of their infinitive termination, some of those having several verbs belonging to them inflected differently from each other.

A view of the whole of these combinations is here given, with a corresponding verb of every variety of inflexion, by way of index to the following Tables.

TERMINATIONS OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

Acere	<i>see</i> giacere
	cadere
Adere	— { invadere
	radere
Aere } Arre }	— trarre
Agnere	— fragnere
Alere	— valere
Andere	— spandere
Anere	— rimanere
Angere } Agnere }	— frangere
Apere	— sapere
Ardere	— ardere
Arere	— parere
Argere	— spargere
Arre	— trarre
Ascere	— { nascere
	pascere
Audere	— applaudere
Ecere	— lecere
	cedere
Edere	— { ledere
	sedere
	vedere
Eggere	— leggere
Egliere } Erre }	— { scegliere
	scerre
	svellere

Egnere	<i>see</i> spegnere
	divellere
Ellere	— { espellere
	svellere
Empiere	— empiere
	accendere
Endere	— { fendere
	prendere
	rendere
Enere	— tenere
Erdere	— perdere
Ere	— bere
	aspergere
Ergere	— { ergere
	mergere
Erpere	— serpere
Erre <i>see</i> Egliere	
Ertere	— invertere
Ervere	— fervere
Escere	— { crescere
	mescere
	connettere
	flettere
Ettere	— { genuflettere
	mettere
	riflettere
Iacere	— giacere

Idere	<i>see</i>	{ assidersi decidere	Orbere	<i>see</i>	assorbere
Iedere	—	{ chiedere riedere	Orcere	—	torcere
Igere	—	{ dirigere esigere	Ordere	—	mordere
Iggere	—	figgere	Orgere	—	porgere
Imere	—	{ comprimere dirimere redimere	Orre	{ —	{ porre
Incere	—	vincere	Onere	{ —	{ ponere
Indere	—	scindere	Orre	<i>see</i>	
Ingere	{ —	{ cingere	Ogliere		
Ignere	{ —	{ stringere	Orrere	—	correre
Inguere	—	distinguere	Oscere	—	conoscere
Iovere	—	piovare	Otere	—	potere
Istere	—	assistere	Overe	—	dovere
Ivere	—	{ scrivere vivere	Uadere	—	suadere
Odere	—	{ godere rodere	Ucere	—	rilucere
Ogliere	{ —	{ cogliere	Udere	—	alludere
Orre	{ —	{ corre	Uggere	—	{ struggere suggere
Olere	—	{ dolersi solere volere	Ugnere	<i>see</i>	
Olgere	—	volgere	Ungere		
Olvere	—	{ assolvere risolvere	Ulgere	—	rifulgere
Ompere	—	rompere	Umere	—	assumere
Ondere	—	{ ascondere fondere rispondere	Ungere	{ —	{ giungere
			Ugnere	{ —	{ cuocere nuocere
			Uocere	—	scuotere
			Uotere	—	muovere
			Uovere	—	surgere
			Urgere	—	addurre
			Urre	{ —	{ discutere
			Ucere	{ —	
			Utere	—	

TERMINATIONS OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

Alire	<i>see</i> salire	Ertire	<i>see</i> avvertire
Ambire	— ambire	Ire	— { dire
Aprire	— aprire		— { gire
Ardire	— ardire		— { ire
Arire	— apparire	Offrire	— offrire
Aurire	— esaurire	Olire	— olire
Dire	— dire	Ollire	— bollire
Eguire	— seguire	Oprire	— aprire
Ellire	— seppellire	Orire	— morire
Empire	— empire	Struire	— { costruire
Enire	— venire		— { costruire
	— { digerire	Udire	— udire
Erire	— { offerire	Uggire	— { fuggire
	— { profferire		— { muggire
Ernire	— schernire	Uscire	— uscire

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
(1) ANDARE <i>To go</i>	vo or vado vai va andiamo andate vanno	R	R	andrò	andrei
DARE <i>To give</i>	do dai dà diamo date danno	R	detti or diedi desti dette or diede demmo deste dettero or diedero	darò	darei
FARE <i>To do</i>	fo or faccio fai fa facciamo fate fanno	faceva	feci facesti fece facemmo faceste fecero	farò	farei
(2) STARE <i>To stand</i> (3)	sto stai sta stiamo state stanno	R	stetti stesti stette stemmo steste stettero	starò	starei

(1) *Riandare*, to go again, is irregular, like *andare*. *Riandare*, to examine, is regular.

(2) Remark. The verb *stare*, is also used to express the place of abode, or habitation.
— Ex: Where do you live? *Dove state voi?*

OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
va vada andiamo andate vadano	vada vada vada andiamo andiate vadano	R	R	R
dà dia diamo date diano	dia dia dia diamo diate diano	dessi dessi desse dessimo deste dessero	R	R
fa faccia facciamo fate facciano	faccia faccia faccia facciamo facciate facciano	facessi facessi facesse facessimo faceste facessero	facendo	fatto
sta stia stiamo state stiano or stieno	stia stii stia stiamo stiate stiano or stieno	stessi stessi stesse stessimo steste stessero	R	R

(3) *Ristare*, to stop, irregular, like *stare*. *Restare*, to remain, regular.

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit
(1) ACCENDERE <i>To kindle</i>	R	R	accessi	R	R
ADDURRE, (2) ADDUCERE, <i>To bring</i> <i>To alledge</i>	adduco	adduceva	addussi adducesti addusse adducemmo adduceste addussero	addurrò	addurre
ALLUDERE <i>To allude</i>	R	R	allusi	R	R
APPLAUDERE <i>To applaud</i>	R	R	2d p. sing. applaudesti 3d p. sing. applause 2d p. plur. applaudeste 3d p. plur. applausero	R	R
ARDERE <i>To burn</i>	R	R	arsi	R	R
ASCONDERE <i>To hide</i>	R	R	ascosi	R	R

(1) *Prendere, dipendere, propendere*, are regular, like *credere*; *impendere* also, its participle *impeso* and *impenduto* excepted. All other verbs of this termination, as *tendere, difendere*, etc. are irregular, like *accendere*.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
R	R	R	R	acceso
adduci	adduca	adduceffi	adducendo	addotto
R	R	R	R	alluso
R	R	R	R	D
R	R	R	R	arso
R	R	R	R	ascoso ascosto

(2) The infinitive termination *ucere*, in this and other verbs, is obsolete, although most of their inflexions are derived from it.

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
ASPERGERE <i>To sprinkle</i>	R	R	aspersi	R	R
(1) ASSIDERSI <i>To sit down</i>	D	D	mi assisi	D	D
ASSISTERE <i>To assist</i>	R	R	R	R	R
ASSolvere <i>To absolve</i>	R	R	assolvei assolvetti assolsi	R	R
ASSORBERE <i>To absorb</i>	R	R	R	R	R
ASSUMERE <i>To assume</i>	R	R	assunsi	R	R
BERE, or BEVERE <i>To drink</i>	bevo	beveva	bevvi, bevei, or bevetti	berò or beverò	berei or beverei
CADERE <i>To fall</i>	R	R	caddi	cadrò or caderò	cadrei or caderei
CALERE (impers.) <i>To care</i>	3d p. sing. cale	3. p. sing. caleva 3 p. pl. calevano	3d p. sing. calse 3. p. pl. calsero	3. p. sing. calerà or carrà	3. p. sing. calereb- be or carrebbe

(1) Except in the preterite and participle, *assidersi* is not used, but *sedere*.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
R	R	R	R	asperso
D	D	D	D	assiso
R	R	R	R	assistito
R	R	R	R	assoluto assolto
R	R	R	R	assorto absorto
R	R	R	R	assunto
bevi	beva	bevessi	bevendo	bevuto
R	R	R	R	R
3d. p. sing. caglia	3d. p. sing. caglia	3d p. sing. calesse	calendo	caluto

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
CEDERE <i>To yield</i>	R	R	cedei cedetti cessi <i>obs.</i>	R	R
(1) CHIEDERE <i>To ask</i>	R	R	chiesi	R	R
(2) CINGERE <i>To gird</i>	R	R	cinsi	R	R
COGLIERE, CORRE <i>To gather</i>	colgo, or coglio cogli coglie cogliamo cogliete colgono or cogliono	coglieva	colsi	coglierò or corrò	coglierei or correi
COMPRIMERE <i>To compress</i>	R	R	compressi	R	R
CONNETTERE <i>To connect</i>	R	R	connessi or connettei	R	R
CONOSCERE <i>To know</i>	R	R	conobbi	R	R
CORRERE <i>To run</i>	R	R	corsi	R	R
CRESCERE <i>To grow</i>	R	R	crebbi	R	R

(1) *Richiedere* has the participle *richieduto* and *richiesto*.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
R	R	R	R	ceduto cesso, <i>obs.</i>
R	R	R	R	chiesto
R	R	R	R	cinto
cogli colga, coglia cogliamo cogliete colgano, cogliano	colga, coglia colga, coglia colga, coglia cogliamo cogliate colgano, cogliano	cogliessi	cogliendo	colto
R	R	R	R	compresso
R	R	R	R	connesso
R	R	R	R	conosciuto
R	R	R	R	corso
R	R	R	R	cresciuto

(2) For verbs ending in *tringere*, see *stringere*.

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condi
CUOCERE <i>To cook</i>	cuoco cuoci cuoce cuociamo cocete cuocono	coceva	cossi cocesti cosse cocemmo coceste cossero	cocerò	cocere
(1) DECIDERE <i>To decide</i>	R	R	decisi	R	R
DIRIGERE <i>To direct</i>	R	R	diressi	R	R
DIRIMERE <i>To divide</i>	R	R	R	R	R
DISCUTERE <i>To discuss</i>	R	R	discussi	R	R
DISTINGUERE <i>To distin- (guish)</i>	R	R	distinsi	R	R
DOVERE <i>To owe</i>	devo, debbo or deggio devi, dei deve, debbe, or dee dobbiamo, or deggiamo dovete devono, debbono, deggiono or deono	R	R	dovrò	dovrei

(1) *Stridere*, to shriek, is regular.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
cuoci cuoca cociamo cocete cuocano	cuoca cuoca cuoca cociamo cociate cuocano	cocessi	cocendo	cotto
R	R	R	R	deciso
R	R	R	R	diretto
R	R	R	R	D
R	R	R	R	discusso
R	R	R	R	distinto
D	debba, deva, deggia debba, deva, deggia debba, deva, deggia dobbiamo, deg- giamo dobbiate deggiate debbano deggiano	R	R	R

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit
DOLERSI <i>To grieve</i>	mi dolgo, or mi doglio ti duoli si duole ci dogliamo vi dolete sidolgono or si dogliono	R	mi dolsi	mi dorro	midorre
ERGERE <i>To erect</i>	R	R	ersi	R	R
ESIGERE <i>To exact</i>	R	R	R	R	R
ESPELLERE <i>To expel</i>	R	R	espulsi	R	R
FENDERE <i>To cleave</i>	R	R	fendei (?)	R	R
FERVERE <i>To be hot</i>	R	R	R	R	R
(1) FIGGERE <i>To drive in</i>	R	R	fissi or fisi	R	R
(2) FLETTERE <i>To bend</i>	D	D	D	D	D
(3) FONDERE <i>To melt</i>	R	R	fusi or fondei	R	R

(1) Other verbs ending in *iggere* make only *issi* in the preterite, *itto* in the participle: but *affliggere*, *crocifiggere*, *prefiggere* make their participle in *isso*.

(2) See *genuflettere* and *riflettere*.

35 fondei an irregular participle

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
duoliti dolgasi, dogliasi dogliamoci doletevi olgansi, dogliansi	mi dolga, mi doglia ti dolga, ti doglia si dolga, si doglia ci dogliamo vi dogliate si dolgano, si dogliano	R	R	R
R	R	R	R	eretto erto
R	R	R	R	esatto
R	R	R	R	espulso
R	R	R	R	fenduto fesso
R	R	R	R	D
R	R	R	R	fitto fisso fiso
D	D	D	D	flesso
R	R	R	R	fuso fonduto

(3) Its compounds have only the irregular terminations *usi* in the preterite, and *uso* in the participle.

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit
(1) FRANGERE, or FEAGNERE <i>To break</i>	R	R	fransi	R	R
(2) GENUFLET- TERE, <i>To bend the knee</i>	R	R	genuflessi	R	R
GIACERE <i>To lie down</i>	giaccio giaci giace giacciamo giacete giacciono	R	giacqui	R	R
GODERE <i>To enjoy</i>	R	R	R	goderò or godrò	goderei or godrei
(3) GIUNGERE, GIUGNERE <i>To arrive</i>	R	R	giunsi	R	R
INVADERE <i>To invade</i>	R	R	invasi	R	R
INVERTERE <i>To overturn</i>	R	R	R	R	R

(1) *Angere*, to grieve, has no inflexion except *ange*, 3d pers. sing. of the Indicative Present; and is confined to poetry.

(2) *Circonflettere* and *inflettere* follow *genuflettere*: *riflettere* differs.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
R	R	R	R	franto
R	R	R	R	genuflesso
giaci giaccia giacciamo giacete giacciano	giaccia giaccia giaccia giacciamo giacciate giacciano	R	R	giaciuto or stato a giacere }
R	R	R	R	R
R	R	R	R	giunto
R	R	R	R	invaso
R	R	R	R	inverso

(3) Verbs ending in *ungere* may transpose the *g*, and *n*, when an *e* or a *t* follows; as, *ungere* or *giugnere*: *giunge* or *giugne*: *giungi* or *giugni*.

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit
LECERE, (obsolete) <i>To be lawful</i>	<i>3d p. sing.</i> lece, (<i>it is</i> <i>lawful</i>)	D	D	D	D
LEDERE <i>To offend</i>	R	R	lesi	R	R
LEGGERE <i>To read</i>	R	R	lessi	R	R
MERGERE <i>To plunge</i>	R	R	mersi	R	R
MESCERE <i>To mix</i>	R	R	R	R	R
METTERE <i>To put</i>	R	R	misi or mettei messi	} infre- quent.	R
MORDERE <i>To bite</i>	R	R	morsi		R
MUOVERE, or MOVERE <i>To move</i>	muovo muovi muove moviamo movete muovono	moveva	mossi movesti mosse movemmo moveste mossero	moverò	movere
NASCERE <i>To be born</i>	R	R	nacqui	R	R

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
D	D	D	D	lecito
R	R	R	R	leso
R	R	R	R	letto
R	R	R	R	merso
R	R	R	R	misto mesciuto
R	R	R	R	messo
R	R	R	R	morso
nuovi nuova noviamo novete nuovano	muova muova muova moviamo moviate muovano	movessi	movendo	mosso
R	R	R	R	nato

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit
NUOCERE <i>To hurt</i>	nuoco nuoci nuoce nociamo nocete nuocono	noceva	nocqui nocesti nocque nocemmo noceste nocquero	nocerò	nocerei
PASCERE <i>To feed</i>	R	R	R	R	R
PARERE <i>To appear</i>	paio pari pare paiamo parete paiono	R	parvi	parrò	parrei
PERDERE <i>To lose</i>	R	R	perdei perdetti or persi	R	R
PIOVERE <i>To rain</i>	R	R	piovvi or piovei	R	R
(1) PORGERE <i>To offer</i>	R	R	porsi	R	R
PORRE <i>To put</i> PONERE (obsolete)	pongo poni pone poniamo ponete pongono	poneva	posi ponesti pose ponemmo poneste posero	porrò	porrei

(1) *Sorgere*, to rise follows *porgere*.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
nuoci nuoca nociamo nocete nuocano	nuoca nuoca nuoca nociamo nociate nuocano	nocessi	nocendo	nociuto
R	R	R	R	pasciuto
paia paia paiamo parete paiano	paia paia paia paiamo paiate paiano	R	R	paruto
R	R	R	R	perduto perso
D	R	R	R	R
R	R	R	R	porto
poni ponga poniamo ponete pongano	ponga ponga ponga poniamo poniate pongano	ponessi	ponendo	posto

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit
POTERE <i>To be able</i>	posso puoi può, potete possiamo potete possono or ponno	R	R	potrò	potrei
(1) PRENDERE <i>To take</i>	R	R	presi or prendei	R	R
RADERE <i>To shave</i>	R	R	radei or rasi	R	R
REDIMERE <i>To redeem</i>	R	R	redimei or redensi	R	R
RENDERE <i>To return</i>	R	R	rendei rendetti or resi	R	R
RIEDERE <i>To return</i>	riedo riedi riede 3d. p. plur. riedono	D	D	D	D
RIFLETTERE <i>To reflect</i>	R	R	R	R	R
RIFULGERE <i>To shine</i>	R	R	rifulsi	R	R

(1) The compounds of *prendere* usually make the preterite in *esi*.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
D	<p>possa possa possa possiamo possiate possano</p>	R	R	R
R	R	R	R	preso
R	R	R	R	raso
R	R	R	R	redento
R	R	R	R	reso renduto
<p>iedi ieda <i>d p. plur.</i> iedano</p>	<p>rieda rieda rieda <i>3d p. plur.</i> riedano</p>	D	D	D
R	R	R	R	riflettuto riflesso
R	R	R	R	D

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
RILUCERE <i>To shine</i>	R	R	rilussi <i>or</i> rilucei	R	R
RIMANERE <i>To remain</i>	rimango rimani rimane rimaniamo rimanete rimangono	R	rimasi	rimarrò	rimarrei
RISOLVERE <i>To resolve</i>	R	R	risolvei <i>or</i> risolsi	R	R
RISPONDERE <i>To answer</i>	R	R	risposi	R	R
RODERE <i>To gnaw</i>	R	R	rosi	R	R
ROMPERE <i>To break</i>	R	R	ruppi	R	R
SAPERE <i>To know</i>	so sai sa sappiamo sapete sanno	R	seppi	saprò	saprei
SCEGLIERE <i>or</i> SCERRE <i>To choose</i>	scelgo scegli sceglie scegliamo scegliete scelgono <i>or</i> scegliuno	sceglieva	scelsi	sceglierò	sceglie- rei

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
R	R	R	R	D
rimani rimanga rimaniamo rimanete rimangano	rimanga rimanga rimanga rimaniamo rimaniate rimangano	R	R	rimaso rimasto }
R	R	R	R	risoluto
R	R	R	R	risposto
R	R	R	R	roso
R	R	R	R	rotto
sappi sappia sappiamo sappiate sappiano	sappia sappia sappia sappiamo sappiate sappiano	R	R	R
scegli sceglia, scegli scegliamo scegliete sceglano scegliano	sceлга sceлга sceлга scegliamo scegliate sceglano scegliano	scegliessi	scegliendo	scelto

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit
(1) SCINDERE <i>To separate</i>	R	R	scissi	R	R
SCRIVERE <i>To write</i>	R	R	scrissi	R	R
SCUOTERE <i>To shake</i>	scuoto scuoti scuote scotiamo scotete scuotono	scoteva	scossi scotesti scosse scotemmo scoteste scossero	scoterò	scotere
SEDERE <i>To sit down</i>	siedo, seggo or seggio siedi siede, siè sediamo or seggiama sedete siedono seggono or seggiono	R	R	sederò sedrò	sedere sedrei
SERPERE <i>To creep</i>	serpo serpi serpe 3d p. plur. serpono	serpeva serpevi serpeva 3d p. pl. serpevano	D	D	D
(2) SOLERE <i>To be wont</i>	soglio suoli suole sogliamo solete sogliono	R	D	D	D

(1) *Prescindere* is regular; *discindere*, *rescindere* are irregular.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
R	R	R	R	scisso
R	R	R	R	scritto
scuoti scuota scotiamo cotete cuotano	scuota scuota scuota scotiamo scotiate scuotano	scotessi	scotendo	scosso
siedi sieda segga ediamo eggiamo edete edano e seggano	sieda segga seggia sieda segga seggia sieda segga seggia sediamo seggiamo sediate seggiate siedano seggiano	R	R	R
serpi serpa erpiamo d p. pl. serpano	serpa serpa serpa serpiamo 3d p. pl. serpano	D	D	D
D	soglia soglia sogliamo sogliate sogliano	R	R	solito

(2) The simple tenses which are wanting, are supplied by the participle and auxiliary:
, I was wont, *fui solito*.

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
SPANDERE <i>To spread</i>	R	R	spandei or spandetti	R	R
SPARGERE <i>To diffuse</i>	R	R	sparsi	R	R
SPEGNERE <i>To extin- guish</i>	spengo spegni spegne spegniamo spegnete spengono	R	spensi	R	R
STRINGERE , STRIGNERE <i>To bind</i>	R	R	strinsi	R	R
STRUGGERE <i>To melt</i>	R	R	strussi	R	R
(1) SVELLERE, SVERRE <i>To pluck out</i>	svello, svelgo sveli svelle svelliamo svellete svellono or svelgono	svelleva	svelsi svellesti svelse svellemmo svellestes svelsero	svellerò	svellere
SUADERE <i>To persuade</i>	R	R	suasi	R	R
SUGGERE <i>To suck</i>	R	R	R	R	R

(1) *Disvegliere, disvellere, disverre, divvegliere, diverre*, follow *svellere*: *convellere* makes the preterite *convellei*; the participle, *convulso*; in other parts it is regular.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
R	R	R	R	spanduto spanto
R	R	R	R	sparso
pegni penga pegliamo pegnete pengano <i>or</i> pegnano	spenga spenga spenga spegniamo spegniate spengano <i>or</i> spegnano	R	R	spento
R	R	R	R	stretto
R	R	R	R	strutto
velli vella svelga velliama vellete vellanosvelgano	svella svelga svella svelga svella svelga svelliama svelliate svellanosvelgano	svellesi	svellendo	svelto
R	R	R	R	suaso
R	R	R	R	D

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
SURGERE <i>To rise</i>	R	R	sursi	R	R
TENERE <i>To hold</i>	tengo tieni tiene teniamo tenete tengono	R	tenni	terrò	terrei
TORCERE <i>To twist</i>	R	R	torsi	R	R
TRARRE , TRAERE <i>To draw</i>	traggo trai traggi trae tragge traiamo traggiamo traete traggono tranno	traeva	trassi traesti trasse traemmo traeste trassero	trarrò	trarrei
VALERE <i>To be worth</i>	valgo voglio vali vale valiamo valete valgono vagliano	R	valsi	varrò	R

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
R	R	R	R	surto
tieni tenga teniamo tenete tengano	tenga tenga tenga teniamo teniate tengano	R	R	R
R	R	R	R	torto
trai, traggi tragga traiamo traggiamo traete traggano	tragga tragga tragga traiamo traggiamo traiate traggiate traggano	traessi	traendo	tratto
vali valga vaglia valiamo vate valgano vagliano	valga vaglia valga vaglia valga vaglia valiamo valiate valgano vagliano	R	R	valuto

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
(1) VEDERE <i>To see</i>	vedo veggo or veggio vedi ve' vede vediamo veggiamo vedete vedono veggono veggiono	R	vidi	vedrò	vedrei
VINCERE <i>To vanquish</i>	R	R	vinsi	R	R
VIVERE <i>To live</i>	R	R	vissi	viverò or vivrò	vivereì or vivre
(2) VOLERE <i>To be wil- ling</i>	voglio vo' vuoi vuo' or vuoli vuole vogliamo volete vogliono	R	volli	vorrò	vorrei
VOLGERE <i>To turn</i>	R	R	volsi	R	R

(1) *Antivedere*, *avvedersi*, *rivedere* make the future in *drò*, the conditional in *drei*: the other compounds of *vedere*, in *arò*, *erei*.

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
vedi ve' veda vegga veggia vediamo veggiamo vedete vedano veggano veggiano	veda vegga veggia veda vegga veggia veda vegga veggia vediamo veggiamo vediate veggiate vedano veggano veggiano	R	vedendo veggendo	veduto visto
R	R	R	R	vinto
R	R	R	R	vivuto vissuto
D	voglia voglia voglia vogliamo vogliate vogliano	R	R	R
R	R	R	R	volto

(2) *Volsi* is the proper preterite of *volgere*; but has been sometimes used in poetry or that of *volere*.

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
APPARIRE <i>To appear</i>	apparisco apparisci apparisce appare appariamo apparite appariscono appaiono	R	apparii apparvi or apparsi	R	R
APRIRE <i>To open</i>	apro	R	aprii or apersi	R	R
(1) ARDIRE <i>To dare</i>	ardisco ardisci ardisce D ardite ardiscono	R	R	R	R
AVVERTIRE <i>To warn</i>	avverto avvertisco	R	R	R	R
BOLLIRE <i>To boil</i>	bollo bolli bolle bogliamo bollite bollono	R	R	R	R
CONVERTIRE <i>To convert</i>	converto convertisco	R	convertii or conversi	R	R

(1) The deficiencies of *ardire* may be supplied by *osare*, or *avere ardimento*; as, noi osiamo, or abbiamo ardimento, we dare. *Ardiamo*, *ardiate*, *ardendo*, *ardente*, belong to *ardere*, to burn.

OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
apparisci apparisca appaia appariamo apparite appariscano appaiano	apparisca appaia apparisca apparisca appaia appariamo appariate appariscano ap- paiano	R	R	apparito apparso
apri	apra	R	R	aperto
ardisci ardisca D ardite ardiscano	ardisca ardisca ardisca D D ardiscano	R	D	R
avverti avvertisci	avverta avverti- sca	R	R	R
bolli bolla bolla bogliamo bollite bollano	bolla bolla bolla bogliamo bogliate bollano	R	R	R
converti conver- tisci	converta conver- tisca	R	R	convertito converso

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future ¹	Condit
CONSTRUIRE, or (1) COSTRUIRE To construct	costruisco or costruisco	R	costruii costruii costrussi costrussi	R	R
DIRE To say	dico dici di' dice diciamo dite dicono	diceva	dissi dicesti disse dicemmo diceste dissero	dirò	direi
DIGERIRE To digest	digerisco	R	R	R	R
(2) EMPIRE To fill	empisco	empiva	empii	empirò	empire
ESAURIRE To exhaust	esaurisco	R	R	R	R
FUGGIRE To flee	fuggo	R	R	R	R
(3) GIRE To go	1st p. pl. giamo 2d p. pl. gite	R	R	R	R
IRE To go	2d p. pl. ite	1st. p. sin. iva 3d p. sin. iva 3d p. pl. ivano	2d p. sin. isti 3d p. pl. iro, ir	1st. p. pl. iremo 2d p. pl. irete 3d p. pl. iranno	3d p. pl. iriano

(1) *Costruire*, *istruire* are preferred to *costruire*, *instruire*.

(2) *Empiere*, to fill; *riempiere*, to refill; are both regularly declined in the second conjugation.

OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
costruisci costruisci	costruisca costruisca	R	R	costruito costruito costrutto costrutto
di' dica diciamo dite dicano	dica dica dica diciamo diciate dicano	dicessi	dicendo	detto
digerisci	digerisca	R	R	digerito digesto
R	R	empissi	R	empito
esaurisci	esaurisca	R	R	esaurito esausto
fuggi	fugga	R	R	R
1st p. pl. giamo 2d p. pl. gite	1st p. pl. giamo 2d p. pl. giate	R	D	R
2d p. pl. ite	D	D	D	ito

(2) *Gire*, where defective, may be supplied by *andare*.

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
MORIRE <i>To die</i>	muoro muoio muori muore muoriamo muoiamo morite muorono muiono	R	R	morro or morirò	morrei or morirei
MUGGIRE <i>To bellow</i>	muggisco	R	R	R	R
OFFERIRE or OFFRIRE <i>To offer</i>	offerisco offro	offeriva or offriva	offerii offrii or offersi	offerirò or offrirò	offerirei or offrirei
OLIRE <i>To smell sweet</i>	D	oliva olivi oliva 3d p. pl. olivano	D	D	D
PROFFERIRE <i>To utter</i>	profferisco	R	profferii or proffersi	R	R
SALIRE <i>To go up To ascend</i>	salgo salisco sali salisci sale salisce sagliamo (1) salite salgono saliscono	R	salii or salsi	R	R
SCHERNIRE <i>To deride</i>	schernisco scherno	R	R	R	R

(1) *Saliamo*, being an inflexion of *salare*, to salt, is used for *sagliamo*, improperly.

OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
muori muora, muoia moriamo muoia mo morite muorano muoia no	muora muoia muora muoia muora muoia muoriamo muo- iamo moriate muoiate muorano muoia- no	R	R	morto
muggisci	muggisca	R	R	R
offerisci offri	offerisca offra	offerissi offrissi	offerendo offrendo	offerto
D	D		D	D
profferisci	profferisca	R	R	R
sali salisci salga salisca sagliamo salite salgano saliscano	salga salisca salga salisca salga salisca sagliamo sagliate salgano saliscano	R	R	R
schernisci scherni	schernisca scherna	R	R	R

IRREGULAR VERBS

Present of the Infinitive.	INDICATIVE MOOD.				
	Present	Imperf.	Preterite	Future	Condit.
(1) SEGUIRE <i>To follow</i>	seguo sieguo segui siegui segue segue seguiamo seguite seguono seguono	R	R	R	R
SEPPELLIRE <i>To bury</i>	seppellisco	R	R	R	R
UDIRE <i>To hear</i>	odo odi ode udiamo udite odono	R	R	R	R
VENIRE <i>To come</i>	vengo vieni viene veniamo venite vengono	R	venni	verrò	verrei
USCIRE <i>To go out</i>	esco esci esce usciamo uscite escono	R	R	R	R

(1) Its compounds, *conseguire*, etc. are conjugated both irregularly, like *seguire*, and regularly, like *finire*: this latter mode is preferable.

OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

Imperative	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.		Gerund	Particip.
	Present	Imperf.		
seguì sieguiti segua siegua seguiamo seguite seguano sieguano	segua siegua segua siegua segua siegua seguiamo seguiate seguano sieguano	R	R	R
seppellisci	seppellisca	R	R	seppellito sepolto
odi oda udiamo udite odano	oda oda oda udiamo udiate odano	R	R	R
vieni venga veniamo venite vengano	venga venga venga veniamo veniate vengano	R	R	venuto
esci esca usciamo uscite escano	esca esca esca usciamo usciate escano	R	R	R

IRREGULAR VERBS

OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Those verbs, though numerous, as the foregoing tables have shown, may be considerably reduced in variety, by observing that, amongst many of them, there is uniformity in their irregularity, so that they may be classed according to rules, of which the most general are these four.

I. Such of them as have the first person of the indicative present in *ggo*, change the *gg* into *ss* in the preterite, and into *tt* in the participle, as in the following.

Present Tense.	Preterite.	Participle.
Traggo	trassi	tratto
Eleggo	elessi	eletto
Reggo	ressi	retto
Affliggo	affissi	affitto
Configgo	confissi	confitto
Trafiggo	trafissi	trafitto
Struggo	strussi	strutto
Distruggo	distrussi	distrutto

Some few deviate a little from this uniformity.

Figgo	fissi	fitto, and fisso
Affiggo	affissi	affisso

The following, though not exactly constructed like the preceding, preserve the analogy of their mode of variation.

Present Tense.	Preterite.	Participle.
Dico	dissi	detto
Cuoco	cossi	cotto
Adduco	addussi	addotto
Conduco	condussi	condotto

Induco	indussi	indotto
Introduco	introdussi	introdotta
Riduco	ridussi	ridotta
Scrivo	scrissi	scritto
Imprimo	impressi	impresso
Esprimo	espressi	espresso
Opprimo	oppressi	oppresso
Reprimo	repressi	represso
Muovo	mossi	mosso
Scuoto	scossi	sosso
Riscuoto	riscossi	riscosso
Percuoto	percossi	percosso
Concedo	concessi	concesso, and conceduto
Vivo	vissi	vissuto, and vivuto

II. Such verbs as have the first person of the indicative present in *do*, (with a vowel before *d*) make the preterite in *si*, and the participle in *so*.

Present Tense.	Preterite.	Participle.
Persuado	persuasi	persuasos
Assido	assisi	assiso
Conquido	conquisi	conquiso
Divido	divisi	diviso
Recido	recisi	reciso
Uccido	uccisi	ucciso
Rido	risi	riso
Rodo	rosi	roso
Chiudo	chiusi	chiuso
Intrudo	intrusi	intruso

The following deviates in its participle.

Chiedo	chiesi	chiesto
--------	--------	---------

III. Those which have the first person of the present in *endo*, make the preterite in *si*, and the participle in *so*, dropping the *n*.

Present Tense.	Preterite.	Participle.
Accendo	accesi	acceso
Ascendo	ascesi	asceso
Apprendo	appresi	appreso
Tendo	tesi	teso
Stendo	stesi	steso
Attendo	attesi	atteso
Contendo	contesi	conteso
Intendo	intesi	inteso
Difendo	difesi	difeso
Offendo	offesi	offeso
Spendo	spesi	speso
Sospendo	sospesi	sospeso
Prendo	presi	preso
Riprendo	ripresi	ripreso
Spando	spasi	spaso, and spanto

Those in *ondo* have the same formations, with little difference.

Present Tense.	Preterite.	Participle.
Fondo	fusi	fuso
Rifondo	rifusi	rifuso
Profondo	profusi	profuso
Confondo	confusi	confuso

The following deviate in their participle.

Nascondo	nascosi	<i>nascoso, and</i>
Rispondo	risposi	<i>nascosto</i>
		<i>risposto</i>

The following may be added as analogous

Pongo	posi	<i>posto</i>
Metto	misi	<i>messo</i>
Prometto	promisi	<i>promesso</i>
Commetto	commisi	<i>commesso</i>

Also other compounds of *metto*, *ammetto*, *dimetto*, *fram-*

metto, intrometto, permetto, rimetto, scommetto, sprometto, trasmetto, etc.

IV. Verbs having one of these three liquids, *l, n, r*, before the last syllable in that person and tense, make the preterite in *si*, and the participle in *to*, retaining such liquid.

Present Tense.	Preterite.	Participle.
Scelgo	scelsi	scelto
Divelgo	divelsi	divelto
Colgo	colsi	colto
Sciolgo	sciolsi	sciolto
Tolgo	tolsi	tolto
Volgo	volsi	volto
Rivolgo	rivolsi	rivolto
Frango	fransi	franto
Piango	piansi	pianto
Spengo	spensi	spento
Cingo	cinsi	cinto
Dipingo	dipinsi	dipinto
Fingo	finsi	finto
Spingo	spinsi	spinto
Sospingo	sospinsi	sospinto
Tingo	tinsi	tinto
Distinguo	distinsi	distinto
Estinguo	estinsi	estinto
Giungo	giunsi	giunto
Ungo	unsi	unto
Mungo	munsi	munto
Pungo	punsi	punto

Some few in *mo* take this formation.

Consumo	consunsi	consunto
Presumo	presunsi	presunto

Also *assumo, desumo, riassumo.*

Present Tense.	Preterite.	Participle.
Torco	torsi	torto
Accorgo	accorsi	accorto
Scorgo	scorsi	scorto
Porgo	porsi	porto
Sorgo	sorsi	sorto
Surgo	sursi	surto

The following are exceptions with regard to the participle.

Ardo	arsi	arso
Mordo	morsi	morso
Spargo	sparsi	sparso
Aspergo	aspersi	asperso
Corro	corsi	corso
Ricorro	ricorsi	ricorso
Stringo	strinsi	stretto
Dolgo	dolsi	doluto
Perdo <i>has</i> }	persi	perso <i>and</i>
	perdei	perduto

(which two last are preferable.)

Exceptions both in the preterite and participle.

Rimango	rimasi	rimasto
Pongo	posi	posto
Tengo	tenni	tenuto

(and their compounds in the like manner.)

Other variations of these verbs being rather peculiar than general, any reduction of them to rules would require much minuteness, and appear too complicated to be of adequate benefit: the student may therefore be referred to the Tables where they are set forth.

LESSON XIV.

OBSERVATIONS

On Would, Should, Could, Ought, Might.

These words are employed in English as auxiliaries, or as Verbs: as auxiliaries they are not expressed in Italian, but serve only for the imperfect subjunctive, and conditional. As verbs they are expressed by

<i>Volere</i>	Would
<i>Potere</i>	Could
<i>Dovere</i>	Ought or Should

These Verbs are defective in English, and are supplied by

To be willing	<i>Volere</i>
To be able	<i>Potere</i>
To be obliged	<i>Dovere</i>

By conjugating them with the auxiliary *to be*, the pupil will be able to ascertain their tenses.

The classification of tenses is thus.

	INDICAT.		SUBJ.	
	Imp.	Pret.	Imp.	Condit.
Would	<i>Voleva,</i>	<i>volli,</i>	<i>volessi,</i>	<i>vorrei.</i>
Might or Could	<i>Poteva,</i>	<i>potei,</i>	<i>potessi,</i>	<i>potrei.</i>
Ought or Should	<i>Doveva,</i>	<i>dovetti,</i>	<i>dovessi,</i>	<i>dovrei.</i>

The compound tenses of the Conditional are the following.

<i>Egli avrebbe voluto sposare mia sorella.</i>	He would have married my sister.
<i>Io avrei potuto chiamarlo.</i>	I could or might have called him
<i>Voi avreste dovuto venire.</i>	You ought or should have come.

The verb *To be*, folloved by an Infinitive, is expressed by *dovere*: as, *Io devo parlare al Re*, I am to speak to the King.— *Voi avreste dovuto pranzare qui*, You were to have dined here.

The English auxiliary *To have*, preceded by the verb *to will*, is only expressed by *volere*: as, *Volete un' arancia?* Will you have un orange?— *Che avreste voluto fare?* What would you have done?

AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH THE SUBJECT.

A Verb agrees with its Nominative in *number* and *person*: as, *Mio fratello legge e scrive*, My brother reads and writes — *Le vostre sorelle sono compite, esse cantano e ballano bene*, Your sisters are accomplished, they sing and dance well.

When there is more than one Nominative either in the singular or plural number, the Verb is to be put in the plural: as, *Giovanni, Pietro e Giacomo sono ricchi*, John, Peter and James *are* rich.

But if the several Nominatives are of different persons, the Verb is then put in the first or second person plural. In the first, if one or more of the Nominatives should be of the first person; in the second, if one or more of them should be of the second person and the rest be of the third: this being the established order of all Languages.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Carlo ed io siamo fratelli.</i>	Charles and <i>I</i> are brothers.
<i>Noi ed il padre siamo infelici.</i>	Our father and <i>we</i> are unhappy.
<i>Tu e Cesare non siete buoni da nulla.</i>	<i>Thou</i> and Cæsar are good for nothing.
<i>Voi e le vostre sorelle siete di buon cuore.</i>	<i>You</i> and your sisters are good hearted.

When the Nominative is a collective noun as *esercito*, army — *folla*, crowd — *plebe*, mob etc. the Verb is generally put in the singular: as, *L' assemblea ha esaminato la questione ed ha mandato la risposta al Re*, The assembly *has* examined the question and *has* sent its answer to the king.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

The *present* denotes that a thing is *actually* passing, that is to say, is either existing or doing: as, *Io amo*, I love — *Eglino parlano*, They speak.

A progressive or continued act, expressed in English by the verb *To be* and participle in *ing*, is expressed in Italian by the verbs *Andare* or *Stare* with the Gerund. If the act implies motion, the former is properly used, if not, the latter.

EXAMPLES.

I am writing.	<i>Io sto scrivendo.</i>
He is looking for.	<i>Egli va cercando.</i>
She was sleeping.	<i>Ella stava dormendo.</i>
We were hunting.	<i>Noi andavamo cacciando.</i>
They will be looking for her.	<i>Essi andranno cercandola.</i>

The *imperfect* expresses a past action with respect to the present moment of speaking, but implies a continuance of action at the time spoken of.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ella entrava al momento che voi uscivate.</i>	She came in at the moment you were going out.
<i>Noi leggevamo un giorno per diletto...</i>	We were reading one day for amusement...

The *preterite* marks that a thing took place at a time completely past.

EXAMPLES.

Quella paura le cagionò la morte. That fear occasioned her death.

Ieri vidi vostro zio. I saw your uncle yesterday.

As there are two tenses in the Italian Language to express a past action, and but one in English, in order to assist the scholar in the manner of using them, we propose the following rule.

Whenever the verb can be changed into *was* with the *Gerund*, or the sense expressed by *used* with the *Infinitive*, without altering its meaning, it is to be put in the imperfect tense: as, *She waited (was waiting or used to wait) for him every day at your sister's, Ella lo aspettava ogni giorno da vostra sorella.*

When considering past moral qualities of persons, or properties of things, as if still existing at the time spoken of, the *imperfect* also is used: as, *Cesare era clemente*, Cæsar *was* merciful—But when their present non existence is referred to, the *preterite* must be used: as, *Cesare fu clemente*, Cæsar *was* merciful.

NB. The *compound present* signifies an action done at an indeterminate time, or within a period not finished: as, *L'ho veduto oggi, questo mese, quest'anno*, I have seen him to-day, this month, this year.

The *compound past tenses* of the *Indicative Mood* are generally used with the *compound of the Imperfect*, but when the following conjunctions, *subito che*, as soon as — *come*, as — *appena che*, hardly — *quando*, when — *dopo che*, after, precede them, they are always used with the *compound preterite* and never with the *compound imperfect*.

EXAMPLES.

She <i>had</i> already <i>spoken</i> to him.	<i>Essa gli aveva già parlato.</i>
After she <i>had</i> <i>spoken</i> to him.	<i>Dopo che gli ebbe parlato.</i>
They <i>had</i> <i>arrived</i> at Milan.	<i>Erano arrivati a Milano.</i>
When they <i>had</i> <i>arrived</i> at Milan.	<i>Quando furono arrivati a Milano.</i>

NB. It is common in English for a verb referring to a future time, to be in the present or compound present tense, preceded generally by the conjunction *se*, or by any of the above-mentioned, but in Italian it is put in the *future tense* simple or compound.

EXAMPLES.

If he <i>speaks</i> of it I will answer him.	<i>Se egli ne parlerà gli risponderò.</i>
As soon as she <i>comes</i> we will tell it her.	<i>Subito che verrà glielo diremo.</i>
After they <i>have given</i> the order to me I will pay you.	<i>Dopo che mi avranno dato l'ordine vi pagherò.</i>

The Italians generally use the *compound future* with the adverb *forse*, perhaps, and with verbs denoting *uncertainty*, as *Sperare*, To hope — *Credere*, To believe etc. whilst the English make use of the *compound present*: as, Perhaps he *has* not done it, *Forse non lo avrà fatto* — I hope she *has* told it to them, *Spero che lo avrà detto loro*.

NB. The Infinitive Mood is used in Italian with a negative, (but never without) instead of the second person singular of the Imperative: as, *Non amare*: *Non leggere*: *Non udire*, Do not (thou) love: Do not read: Do not hear. But with the auxiliary Verbs *Avere* and *Essere*, we may use either the Imperative or the Infinitive:

as, *Non abbi sospetto*, or *non aver sospetto*, Do not be suspicious — *Non sii curioso*, or *non esser curioso*, Do not be inquisitive.

EXERCISE 14. ⁽¹⁾

Your mother, your sisters and I are going to the theatre to-night — When he knows that they have arrived, he will be looking for them through the whole city — Perhaps she has not finished writing to one of her friends — When you return we will go there together, and after we have spoken to him, we will think what we have to do — Miss Hoppner was to have dined at my (step mother's) — When I was at Vienna I went three times a week to Court, where I received particular marks of attention — The most celebrated temple at Rome was built by Augustus after the battle of Philippi — The memory of Adrian was surprising — Will you have some tea? — Do not be (thou) proud for so trifling a thing — I hope she has spoken to him as he deserved — I saw your sister yesterday who was gathering flowers in my

2 3 4

(1) The pupil must put the verbs in their proper tenses, as the Infinitives only are given.

brother in law's garden—The master will come as soon as
 he has given a lesson to Miss Woolmer — I always assisted
 = — assistere
 him under every circumstance, and sometimes also lent
 in prestare
 him money, therefore if he remembers my kindness, he
 (Dat.) però ricordarsi (Gen.) gentilezza (pl.)
 2 3 1 2
 will not speak ill of me (any more) — They had been (free from)
 più senza
 3 1
 pride (before that time), but as soon as they had obtained
 fin allora
 the inheritance, they became very haughty — I called upon
 altiero passare da
 her to-day and found that she was reading Tasso.

LESSON XV.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

It is to be observed that absolute, or determinate propositions cannot be rendered by the Subjunctive Mood, the Indicative being used, whenever the principal proposition expresses a *positive thing*, as the following verbs denote: *Sapere* or *Conoscere*, To know — *Comprendere*, To understand — *Narrare*, To relate — *Dire*, To tell, and other verbs expressing a *thing which is beyond a doubt*: as, I know she is at home, *So ch' ella è in casa*.

Hence it will be clearly seen, that when the verb of the principal proposition is accompanied by a negative particle, or expresses *command, entreaty, will, hope, fear, consent, doubt, opinion, wonder, surprise, desire, permission, prohibition, impediment, displeasure* etc. the

existence in short of *an object involving desire*, either *negatively* or *affirmatively*, the dependant verb must then be placed in the Subjunctive Mood, when *the subjects of both verbs refer to different persons*; as, I wish, I intreat etc. that he *should go*, *Bramo, prego etc. che egli vada*.

NB. If the subject of both verbs is the same, the second must be in the Infinitive Mood: as, *Le dispiace di dirglielo*, She is sorry to tell it him.

The tense of the verb in the Subjunctive ought always to conform to that of the preceding verb. Should the first verb be in the present or future tense of the Indicative Mood, the second must invariably be in the present of the Subjunctive, simple or compound.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Essa brama ch' egli riesca in quell'affare.</i>	She wishes he <i>may</i> succeed in that affair.
<i>Temo che vostra sorella abbia fatto male a parlar loro.</i>	I am afraid your sister <i>did</i> wrong in speaking to them.
<i>Vostra madre dubiterà forse ch'io non sia un galantuomo.</i>	Your mother will perhaps doubt <i>my being</i> an honest man.

Sometimes when the first verb is in the present of the Indicative, it requires the imperfect of the Subjunctive, that is when the second verb refers to a time past: as, I *think* she *dined* at Mrs. Lawrel's, *Credo che pranzasse dalla Signora Lawrel*. But, not to deviate from the general rule, we may also use the compound of the present of the Subjunctive, and say, *Credo che abbia pranzato dalla Signora Lawrel*.

If however the first verb should be in the Imperfect or Preterite of the Indicative, or in the Conditional, the second is then always put in the Imperfect of the Subjunctive, simple or compound.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Il padre temeva che suo figlio- stro scoprisse il segreto.</i>	The father was afraid his step-son would discover the secret.
<i>La sorella dubitò che il marito fosse giunto.</i>	The sister doubted her hus- band had arrived.
<i>Egli amerebbe ch'essa lo ascol- tasse.</i>	He would be glad she should listen to him.

When the first verb is a *Gerund*, the second verb must be either in the *Present* or the *Imperfect* of the Subjunctive. In the *present*, if the subsequent verb be in a present tense; in the *imperfect*, if the subsequent verb be in a past or in the conditional.

EXAMPLES.

Believing she <i>is</i> right, I will follow her advice.	<i>Credendo che</i> abbia ragione, <i>seguirò il suo consiglio.</i>
Believing she <i>was</i> right, I followed her advice.	<i>Credendo che</i> avesse ragione, <i>seguì il suo consiglio.</i>

The Subjunctive is required also after Impersonal verbs expressing an idea of *necessity* or *convenience*: as, *Bisognare*, To be needful — *Bastare*, To suffice — *Convenire*, To be proper — *Giovare*, To be useful — *Occorrere*, To be necessary: as, *Bisogna, basta, conviene, giova, occorre ch'egli sia prudente*, It is needful, it suffices, it is proper, it is useful, it is necessary for him *to be prudent*.

The verb *Essere*, To be, in the third person singular, followed either by one of the following adjectives or by the nouns *tempo* and *ora*, time: as also by the adverbs *meglio*, better, and *bene* good, admits the following verb in the Subjunctive.

<i>Essere facile</i>	To be easy	<i>Essere espediente</i>	To be expedient
» <i>difficile</i>	» difficult	» <i>sorprendente</i>	» surprising
» <i>possibile</i>	» possible	» <i>necessario</i>	» necessary
» <i>impossibile</i>	» impossible	» <i>probabile</i>	» probable
» <i>giusto</i>	» just	» <i>tempo</i>	» time
» <i>ingiusto</i>	» unjust	» <i>ora</i>	
» <i>decente</i>	» decent	» <i>meglio</i>	» better
» <i>indecente</i>	» improper	» <i>bene</i>	» good

EXAMPLES.

<i>È facile che Pietro lo faccia.</i>	It is easy for Peter to do it.
<i>Era impossibile che io venissi.</i>	It was impossible for me to come.
<i>Sarà necessario che noi compariamo al Tribunale.</i>	It will be necessary for us to appear before the Tribunal.
<i>È tempo che ciò succeda.</i>	It is time it should succeed.
<i>Sarà bene che ne parli liberamente.</i>	It will be good for him to speak freely of it.
<i>Sarebbe stato necessario che il servo fosse arrivato.</i>	It would have been necessary that the servant should have arrived.

It is the property of the Italian Language to invariably use the Subjunctive after the verbs *Parere* or *Sembrare*, To seem — *Credere*, To think — *Giudicare*, To judge — *Supporre*, To suppose — *Non sapere*, Not to know.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Io non so chi voi siate.</i>	I do not know who you are.
<i>Non credo ch' essa ottenga ciò da lui.</i>	I do not think she will obtain that from him.
<i>Pare, or sembra ch' ei sia reo.</i>	It seems he is guilty.

The English verb *Must*, not being impersonal, may take any noun or pronoun for its Nominative, but as the Italian verb *Bisognare* is always impersonal, a change of construction becomes necessary, and this is done by

adding the conjunction *che* after *bisogna*, and transporting the subject or nominative of the English verb *Must* to the following one, which is then put in the Subjunctive Mood.

EXAMPLES.

I must go.	<i>Bisogna che io vada.</i>
Thou must believe it.	<i>Bisogna che tu lo creda.</i>
Peter must be just.	<i>Bisogna che Pietro sia giusto.</i>
We must give her a reward.	<i>Bisogna che noi le diamo una ricompensa.</i>
You must promise her that.	<i>Bisogna che voi le promettiate ciò.</i>
The sisters must be at Rome in a few days.	<i>Bisogna che le sorelle siano a Roma fra pochi giorni.</i>

The verb that follows a relative superlative with the conjunction *che* should also be put in the Subjunctive Mood: as, *Voi siete la più avventurata donna che sia al mondo*, You are the happiest woman in the world — *Egli è il miglior sarto ch'io conosca*, He is the best tailor I know.

Chi, Alcuno, Nessuno, Veruno, Niuno, Nulla, Niente, followed by a relative pronoun in a phrase of *negation, condition, doubt or desire*, require the second verb of the sentence to be in the Subjunctive Mood.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ella non conobbe nessuno che volesse venire.</i>	She did not know any one who would come.
<i>Nulla v'è che lo persuada.</i>	There is nothing that will persuade him.

Chicchessia, Checchessia or *Checchè* followed by *che* require the following verb to be in the Subjunctive Mood: as, *Di chicchessia che parliate*, Of whomsoever you may speak.

Who, Whom, Which, That when carrying with them an idea of *condition*, require the Subjunctive Mood: as, Take a person *who is* used to it, *Prendete una persona che ne sia pratica*.

However and *Whatever* translated by *per*, as we have seen in the indefinite pronouns, require the Subjunctive: as, *However rich you may be*, *Per ricco che siate*.

For those Conjunctions which govern the Subjunctive Mood, we refer to that part of speech.

EXERCISE 15.

I think my sister is gone to the governor's who
(*Abl.*)

(according to) my opinion is the most upright man that I
secondo

know in France — My mother always wished that her sons
should be religious and studious — I wondered how he could
che

deceive that honest man — It was necessary that he who was
the cause of so many wrongs to my friend, should be punished
danno

ed — My father must finish that work before the return
opera prima del

of the king, it will therefore be necessary for him to find
però *trovare*

some one to help him in such an undertaking — I do not
aiutare *impresa*

think she will come — He flatters himself (he will gain) his
lusingare *di vincere la*

cause, but he has not yet found an advocate who will
lite *per anche* *volere*

defend it, so that however rich he may be, I do not
patrocinare così che
 think he can succeed in it — I will never permit my pu-
riuscire
 pils to neglect their tasks — It is probable that he will
trascurare dovere
 come before the time appointed — I am afraid it is late, I
prefisso tardi
 must be at my sister's at eight o'clock precisely — It would
(Abl.)
 be unjust that my son should suffer that punishment, and I
pena
 do not think there is any body who could say otherwise
potere al contrario
 — Where do you imagine Cæsar is now? I think he is now
 in France — It is time that he should go to church, and he
 will do well to take his little sister there — It seems that they
condurre
 preserved their friendship unaltered through every change
intatto ad variar
 of fortune — Mrs. Bowyer wished that she had bought that
 —
 picture, believing it was an original.

LESSON XVI.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

The *Infinitive* is that Mood which affirms indeterminately, without either number or person.

Some Verbs govern a following verb in the Infinitive Mood without a preposition; after other verbs, a preposition is required with the Infinitive.

Infinitives following or depending upon *Dovere*, To

be incumbent — *Fare*, To do — *Potere*, To be able — *Bisognare*, To need — *Volere*, To be willing — *Vedere*, To see — *Udire*, To hear — *Sentire*, To feel, and similar Verbs, as *Mirare*, To behold — *Guardare*, To look — *Ascoltare*, To listen — *Intendere*, To understand — *Sembrare*, To seem etc. take no preposition.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ei può farlo.</i>	He can do it.
<i>Lo vediamo venire.</i>	We see him coming.
<i>Debbo parlarvi.</i>	I ought to speak to you.

They do not require one after *Lasciare* when it means *To allow*, *To permit*, but when it signifies *To leave off*, they take the preposition *di*: as, *Lasciatemi dire le mie ragioni*, Allow me to give my opinion — *Ella non lasciò di ridere tutto il giorno*, She did not leave off laughing all day long.

They do not require one after *Sapere* when it means *To be able*, *To be skilled*, *To know how*: as, *Ei sa parlare a tempo*, He knows how to speak in time. But *Sapere*, To know — *Credere*, To believe — *Conoscere*, To know — *Dire*, To tell — *Narrare*, To relate — *Provare*, To approve — *Affermare*, To affirm — *Negare*, To deny, take *di*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ella sa di non esser rea.</i>	She knows that she is not culpable.
<i>Negarono di averglielo detto.</i>	They denied that they had told it to her.
<i>Il Dott. Stevenson ci disse d'esservi stato.</i>	Dr. Stevenson told us that he had been there.
<i>Credo d'aver ragione.</i>	I believe I am right.

An Infinitive with a verb expressing an *affection of*

the mind: as, *Desiderare*, To desire — *Piacere*, To please — *Godere*, To enjoy — *Sperare*, To hope — *Temere*, To fear — *Rincrescere*, To regret — *Vergognarsi*, To be ashamed etc. takes *di* before it: as, *Desidero di compiacervi*, I desire to oblige you — *Ella si vergognò di riprenderlo*, She was ashamed to reproach him.

Infinitives after the following verbs take *di*.

To acknow- ledge	<i>Riconoscere</i>	To glory in	<i>Gloriarsi</i>
— admonish	<i>Ammonire</i>	— happen	<i>Accadere</i>
— agree	<i>Convenire</i>	— hinder	<i>Impedire</i>
— appear	<i>Parere</i>	— imagine	<i>Immaginarsi</i>
— ask	<i>Chiedere</i>	— intend	<i>Intendere</i>
— avoid	<i>Evitare</i>	— judge	<i>Giudicare</i>
— beckon	<i>Accennare</i>	— meditate	<i>Meditare</i>
— bid	<i>Imporre</i>	— menace	<i>Minacciare</i>
— care	<i>Curarsi</i>	— mind	<i>Guardarsi</i>
— cease	<i>Cessare</i>	— permit	<i>Permettere</i>
— choose	<i>Scegliere</i>	— presume	<i>Presumere</i>
— command	<i>Comandare</i>	— pretend	<i>Pretendere</i>
— conclude	<i>Conchiudere</i>	— prohibit	<i>Proibire</i>
— dare	<i>Osare</i>	— propose	<i>Proporre</i>
— deign	<i>Degnarsi</i>	— recollect	<i>Sovvenirsi</i>
— dissuade	<i>Sconsigliare</i>	— refrain	<i>Astenersi</i>
— doubt	<i>Dubitare</i>	— reproach	<i>Rinfacciare</i>
— endeavour	<i>Procurare</i>	— remember	<i>Ricordarsi</i>
— fail	<i>Mancare</i>	— repent	<i>Pentirsi</i>
— favour	<i>Favorire</i>	— reprove	<i>Rimproverare</i>
— feign	<i>Fingere</i>	— show	<i>Mostrare</i>
— flatter one's self	<i>Lusingarsi</i>	— strive	<i>Ingegnarsi</i>
— finish	<i>Finire</i>	— sustain	<i>Sostenere</i>
— fix	<i>Fissare</i>	— thank	<i>Ringraziare</i>
— forget	<i>Dimenticarsi</i>	— try	<i>Tentare</i>
— grant	<i>Accordare,</i> <i>Concedere</i>	— warn	<i>Ammonire</i>
		— wager, — bet	<i>Scommettere.</i>

After Verbs of motion, whether real, as *Andare*, To go — *Venire*, To come, or figurative, as *Eccitare*, To excite — *Adescare*, To entice — *Animare*, To animate — *Indurre*, To induce, Infinitives take the preposition *a*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Essa venne ieri a vedermi.</i>	She came to see me yesterday.
<i>Pietro andrà dimani a farle visita.</i>	Peter will go and pay her a visit to-morrow.
<i>Voi non la indurrete a fare una tale cosa.</i>	You will not induce her to do such a thing.
<i>Essi gli eccitano sempre a dir male di lei.</i>	They always excite them to speak ill of her.

To this rule may be added.

To accustom	<i>Avvezzare</i>	To constrain	<i>Costringere</i>
— aid	<i>Aiutare</i>	— delay	<i>Indugiare</i>
— aim at	<i>Tendere</i>	— facilitate	<i>Agevolare</i>
— apply one's self	<i>Applicarsi</i>	— labour hard	<i>Stentare</i>
— aspire	<i>Aspirare</i>	— occupy one's self	<i>Occuparsi</i>
— assist	<i>Assistere</i>	— put one's self	<i>Meltersi</i>
— begin	<i>Cominciare</i>	— succeed	<i>Riuscire</i>
— condemn	<i>Condannare</i>	— teach	<i>Insegnare.</i>
— consent	<i>Acconsentire</i>		

After other Verbs Infinitives take indifferently *di* or *a*.

— To advise	<i>Consigliare</i>	To offer one's self	<i>Offrirsi</i>
— be accustomed	<i>Esser solito</i>	— persuade	<i>Persuadere</i>
— exhort	<i>Esortare</i>	— supplicate	<i>Supplicare</i>
— oblige	<i>Obbligare</i>	— think	<i>Pensare.</i>

EXAMPLES.

<i>Io vi esorto a, or di non dirglielo</i>	I exhort you not to tell it to him or to her.
<i>La supplicò a, or di volergli accordare il permesso.</i>	He supplicated her to grant him permission.

NB. When the English particle *to*, before an Infinitive means *in order to*, it must be expressed by *per*: as, I will do it *to* content her, *Lo farò per contentarla* — He will write to her *to* assure her of the truth, *Le scriverà per accertarla della verità*.

Avere and *Dare* require *da* or *a* before the next Infinitive: as, *Eglino hanno molto da fare*, They have a great deal *to* do — *Datemi qualche cosa da mangiare*, Give me some thing *to* eat.

It is one of the most characteristic properties of the Italian Language to use a verb in the Infinitive Mood, having the nature of a Substantive, in every case with the definite masculine article prefixed, either alone or united with an adjective, adverb etc.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Nelle sollecitudini delle leggi è il ben vivere d'ogni mortale.</i>	<i>The well being of every mortal consists in the protection of the laws.</i>
<i>Il comune favellare degli uomini è sempre....</i>	<i>The ordinary conversation of men is always....</i>
<i>Il suo parlar mi piace sì, che...</i>	<i>Her speaking pleases me so, that...</i>

The masculine definite article is also elegantly used with the Infinitive, when it is preceded by the verb *To be*, impersonally used, united to an adjective: as, It is as easy *to* say it, as it is difficult *to* do it, *Egli è facile il dirlo, quanto difficile il farlo*.

The Infinitive Mood with a preposition is generally used in Italian, whilst the participle present is used in English.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Dopo averle parlato fu contentissimo.</i>	After <i>having</i> spoken to her he was delighted.
<i>Ei le passò dappresso senza guardarla.</i>	He passed close to her without <i>looking</i> at her.
<i>All'entrar in Firenze s'abbatterono nel Signor James.</i>	On <i>entering</i> Florence they met Mr. James.

An Infinitive, governed by the preposition *da*, commonly takes a passive sense.

EXAMPLES.

<i>La virtù è da commendare, or da commendarsi.</i>	Virtue is <i>to be</i> commended.
<i>Ciò non è da credere, or da credersi.</i>	It is not <i>to be</i> believed.

It is a property of the Italian Language to use the Infinitive Mood instead of the third person singular of the Present, Imperfect, and compound Preterite of the Indicative, as well as of the Subjunctive Mood, depending on another preceding verb by means of the conjunction *che*, which is then suppressed, changing the *Nominative* of the second verb into the *Accusative* of the first. Such a construction, being an imitation of the Latin, is frequently used by our classic Authors.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Vi converrà aver sempre nella memoria Iddio essere stato Creatore del Cielo, e della terra (that is <i>che Iddio è stato...</i>)</i>	It behoves you to remember <i>that God was</i> the Creator of heaven and earth.
---	---

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ei consumò tutta la mattina in cercarli.</i>	He spent all the morning in looking for them.
<i>Nel vederti ripiglia il lagrimar l' usata via.</i>	When I see you my grief resumes its wonted course.
<i>Egli credette di salvar il figlio col negar d' essergli padre.</i>	He thought to save his son by denying that he was his father.

The Gerunds of the auxiliary verbs *Avere* and *Essere* are often elegantly omitted, and the participles belonging to them used alone, agreeing with the Accusative, if *Avere*, and with the Nominative, if *Essere*: as, *Giunto il familiare a Genova, e date le lettere, e fatta l'ambasciata, fu dalla donna con gran festa ricevuto* (that is *essendo giunto. . . avendo date. . . avendo fatta.*) The servant *having* arrived at Genoa and *having* delivered the letters and given the message, was received by the lady with great joy.

The Gerund governs words dependent on it like any other inflexions of the verb from which it is derived.

PARTICIPLE.

There are two Participles, the *present* and the *past*.

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

It is formed by changing the terminations of the Infinitives *are, ere, ire* into *ante, ente, iente*: as, From *Am-are*, To love: *amante*, loving — From *Tem-ere*, To fear: *temente*, fearing — From *Sent-ire*, To feel: *sentiente*, feeling. As may be seen, it is but a simple adjective, consequently it must agree in gender and number with its substantive: as, *Un uomo obbligante*, An obliging man — *La religione dominante*, The established religion — *Quadri parlanti*, Speaking portraits.

PARTICIPLE PAST.

The Participle past of a verb having *Avere* for its auxiliary, is either used absolutely, or agrees with the Accusative connected with it.

When we express an action which takes its origin from the subject or Nominative of the proposition, the participle is unvaried: as, *Ho fabbricato una casa*, I have *built* a house. This example, as may be seen, represents simply an idea of an action done at a past time.

But when we express an idea independent of the Subject or Nominative, that may be said to be inherent to the Object or Accusative, and with such an idea we indicate the state in which such a person or thing is found, the participle, being then considered as a mere adjective, agrees in gender and number with the Accusative: as, *Superbia, invidia, avarizia, sono le tre faville c' hanno i cuori accesi*, Pride, envy, avarice are the three sparks which *inflamed* their hearts (1).

It is absolute when it is followed by an Infinitive, whatever may be the gender and number of the Accusative: as, *Le cose che io già aveva udito dire*, The things which I had already *heard* spoken.

But when *Avere* is preceded by one of the following conjunctive personal pronouns, viz. *mi, ti, ci, vi, lo* or *il, li* or *gli, la, le, ne* in the Accusative case, the parti-

(1) This rule is somewhat difficult to be comprehended by those who have not much experience in our language; for this reason, in order to facilitate the manner of using the participle past, we propose the following rule.

The participle past, when it precedes the Accusative, remains unchanged, but when it follows the Accusative, it must agree with that Accusative in gender and number. Ex. *Ho venduto alcuni libri, ma non quelli che ho comprati da Paolo*, I have *sold* some books, but not those I have *bought* from Paul.

Se egli crede la Repubblica If he thinks *that it is neces-*
aver bisogno che i Senatori sary for the Republic that
parlino libero etc. (that is the Senators should speak
che la Repubblica abbia bi- freely etc.
sogno.)

EXERCISE 16.

¹ To set ³ a fallen enemy ² free, the Italians never
dare (Dat.) *libertà* *unquema-*
³ demanded (so enormous) ¹ a ransom (as to) ² ruin him — It
tale *da*
 would be proper to tell her your opinion, to accustom
conveniente (Dat.)
 her in time to listen to the truth — If you assist me in
^{per} ⁼ ^{aiutare}
 finishing this work I will reward you as you deserve —
ricompensare
 Your brother might work much more to assist his poor
potrebbe
 father, and he will repent not having done it — John's uncle
 came this morning to pay me a visit and persuaded me to
² ¹
 induce his nephew to (give up) gambling — I have long
abbandonare gioco *da gran tempo*
 ceased to reproach your brother-in-law, for he always
perchè
 denies that he is the cause of the misfortunes which have
disgrazia *essere*
 befallen my family — To know how to compose verses like
(Dat.) *come*
 your brother, is a talent few persons possess — The judge
 wished to impose silence upon my son, but he would not
(Dat.) *volle*
 leave off giving his reasons — That person is enticing you
dire
 to swerve from the path of honour, but it is the only way
deviare *sentiero* *via*

to merit the esteem of every body — He came to me to
procacciarsi *da*

take leave, and I had much difficulty to dissuade him from
congedo *distorre*

going to Rome this month — Miss Pearson hoped to have

seen him without his being able to recognize her — That
riconoscere

friend of your's is to be feared, for he only tries to excite
his partisans to avenge themselves — Your poor mother
partigiano *vendicare*

strives to maintain her family honorably, but she has not
the means of obtaining sufficient for the wants of each day.
avere *assai* *bisogno*

LESSON XVII.

GERUND AND PARTICIPLE.

GERUND.

It is used absolutely having reference to some subject or Nominative preceding: as, *Il soldato*, combattendo *con coraggio*, *merita d'esser promosso*, The soldier, fighting with courage, deserves to be promoted.

It serves sometimes to separate the words of relation between one proposition and another: as, *Il padre*, vedendo *il figlio in pericolo*, *si mosse a soccorrerlo*, The father, seeing his son in danger, ran to his assistance.

The Infinitive with the prepositions *in* and *con*, either alone or in conjunction with their articles, has the force of the Gerund.

ciple past must agree in every instance in gender and number with it.

EXAMPLES.

Egli mi ha veduto (mas.) or He has *seen* me.
veduta (fem.)

Quando gli ebbe uccisi. When he had *killed* them.

Le abbiamo intese cantare. We have *heard* them sing.

The participle of a verb conjugated with *Essere* for its auxiliary, always agrees with its Nominative: as *Ella è stimata da tutti*, She is *esteemed* by all — *Essi sono caduti nelle mani del Tiranno*, They have fallen into the Tyrant's hands.

An English participle in the Accusative case governed by a verb, is rendered in Italian either by the Infinitive Mood, or by a tense of the Indicative with the conjunction *che*: as, I hear him *singing*, *Lo sento cantare*, or *Sento che canta*.

The verb *To make*, when reflexive, is always used in English with the participle past after it, but in Italian it requires the Infinitive Mood.

EXAMPLES.

She makes herself *hated* by *Essa si fa odiare da tutti*.
every body.

They have made themselves *Essi si sono fatti rispettare*
respected even by their ene- *anche dai loro nemici*.
mies.

By an idiom of our Language, conjunctions such as *Subito*, *Appena*, *Quando* etc. are frequently suppressed before a compound tense, and the phrase then is to be commenced by the participle.

EXAMPLES.

Parlato <i>che ebbe.</i>	When he had spoken.
Finita <i>che fu la guerra.</i>	After the war was finished.
Cominciato <i>che sarà il lavoro.</i>	As soon as the work shall be commenced.

EXERCISE 17.

Seeing your daughter run so fast, I thought that some
forte
 misfortune had befallen you, where have you sent her? I
essere (Dat.)
 have sent her to call the physician, because my wife has
chiamare medico
 been ill all night — Do you know John's sisters? No, but I
 hear them playing the piano all day — Having met
suonare piano forte
 him, you might have told him that his wife had come to
potevate essere
 bring me the letter that I had asked him for — Miss
 (Dat.) =
 Barrington in twenty six lessons has made sufficient pro-
bastante
 gress in Italian to make herself understood — That Lady
comprendere
 whom Mr. Leslie has seen depart, was the same who made
 —
 use of those talents, which nature has given her — I have
uso (Dat.)
 travelled this year in Italy, where I have had an opportunity
viaggiare = *occasione*
 of seeing several master-pieces of antiquity, and where I
capo-d'opera
 have made a collection of the most valuable pictures and
pregevole

statues — The Misses Home (are very sorry) to hear that
 (Dat.) — *molto dispiace*
 your sisters are gone without leaving word with any one
partire *detto* (Dat.)
 that they were gone to Rome — It is certain that they have
 not committed the crimes of which they have been accu-
delitto
 sed — He, remembering the injuries he had sustained,
 (Gen.) *soffrire*
 would not grant her the assistance she demanded of
volere (Dat.) *aiuto* *chiedere* (Dat.)
 him — When the power of the nobles was overcome, and
potenza *domare*
 when the war with Spain was ended, he had no other
Spagna *finire*
 enemy to fear — Having arrived in England, I found that
 the return of the Queen from France had rejoiced the
rallegrare
 hearts of all.

LESSON XVIII.

OF THE PASSIVE

And the particle **SI**.

It is to be observed that every transitive active Verb may become passive by changing its Nominative case into the Ablative, and its Accusative into the Nominative. Instead therefore of saying: The prince makes laws, *Il principe fa le leggi*, we may say: Laws are made by the prince, *Le leggi sono fatte, or vengono fatte, or si fanno dal principe*.

It follows from this example that the passive tense can be expressed in Italian in three ways.

1st. By the verb *Essere*, To be, to which is united the participle past of every active Verb: as, *Troja fu distrutta dai Greci*, Troy was destroyed by the Greeks.

2^d. By the same participle past and the verb *Venire*, but only in its simple and never in its compound tenses: as, *Troja venne distrutta dai Greci*, Troy was destroyed by the Greeks. If we should say: Troy has been destroyed by the Greeks, it ought to be rendered, *Troja è stata distrutta dai Greci*, and not *è venuta distrutta dai Greci*.

3^d. By the particle *si*, united simply to the verb active, that is to say, that the verb active must be rendered in the same tense, in which the auxiliary verb *To be* is found in English: as, *Troja si distrusse dai Greci*, Troy was destroyed by the Greeks. This latter applies only to the third person of both numbers.

In some instances, but more rarely, the simple tenses of *Andare* are employed in the same manner: as, *Egli andava soggetto alla podagra*, He was subject to the gout.

The agent of a passive verb is governed by *da*, *dal*, *dallo*, *dalla*: *dai*, *dagli*, *dalle*: as, *Il Signor Sullivan è rispettato da lei*, e *dagli amici del Signor Parker*, Mr. Sullivan is respected by her, and by Mr. Parker's friends.

To avoid any confusion between *da* and *con*, either alone or in conjunction with their articles, which in English are both translated by the preposition *by*; we inform the pupil that *da* means *by*, *from*; and *con*, *by the means of*. In the sense last mentioned, when *by* is prefixed to a Gerund, it may be expressed either by *con*, *col*, *collo* with the Infinitive, or by the Gerund alone. When *by* means *through*, it is expressed by *per*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Le reciproche concessioni furono fatte e dal Monarca e da' suoi sudditi.</i>	Reciprocal concessions were made both by the Monarch and his subjects.
<i>Essa ottenne quel favore con preghiere.</i>	She obtained that favour by prayers.
<i>I nemici avevano ottenuto quei privilegj colla conquista.</i>	The enemies had gained those privileges by conquest.
<i>L'intelletto della gioventù si forma col leggere, or leggendo buoni libri.</i>	The mind of youth is formed by reading good books.
<i>Andarono a Roma passando per Perugia.</i>	They went to Rome passing by Perugia.

One, people, they, we, employed indefinitely as Nominatives to an active or intransitive Verb, are rendered in Italian by the particle *si* with the verb in the third person singular, if there is no Accusative.

EXAMPLES.

<i>One</i> believes, <i>people, they</i> believe	— <i>Si crede.</i>
<i>One</i> says, <i>people, they</i> say	— <i>Si dice.</i>
<i>One</i> sleeps, <i>people, they</i> sleep	— <i>Si dorme.</i>

If in a phrase of this kind there be an Accusative of the third person in English, it becomes the Nominative in Italian, and the verb conforms to it in number: as, *One* sees a pine-tree, *Si vede un pino* — *One* sees four pine-trees, *Si vedono quattro pini*.

Should the Accusative be of the first or second person, as *me, thee, us, you*, *si* cannot be used, but either the third person plural of the active, or the Accusative becomes the Nominative with the verb in the passive tense.

EXAMPLES.

<i>They will punish me.</i>	<i>Mi puniranno, or sarò punito.</i>
<i>They do not believe you.</i>	<i>Non vi credono, or non siete creduto.</i>
<i>They do not esteem us.</i>	<i>Non ci stimano, or non siamo stimati.</i>

When *me ne, te ne, ce ne, ve ne* occur in similar phrases, the verb is used in the passive tense, in order to avoid the inconvenient junction of *si*, or with the plural in the active.

EXAMPLES.

<i>They will speak to you of it.</i>	<i>Ve ne sarà parlato, or ve ne parleranno.</i>
<i>They will give us one pound of it.</i>	<i>Ce ne sarà data una libbra, or ce ne daranno una libbra.</i>

When the verb is reflected *one, people, they*, are either expressed by *uno, ciascuno, altri* in the singular, or by *alcuni* in the plural.

EXAMPLES.

<i>One flatters one's self.</i>	<i>Uno, ciascuno or altri si lusinga.</i>
<i>They flatter themselves.</i>	<i>Alcuni si lusingano.</i>

All Verbs having *si* joined to them are conjugated with *Essere* in their compound tenses: as, *Si è parlato di voi*, They have spoken of you, But in these cases we may suppress *si* and add the participle past *stato* and say, *È stato parlato di voi*, They have spoken of you—*Si sono dette molte cose di lei*, or *Sono state dette molte cose di lei*, They have said many things of her.

It is said: It is believed — It was said: It was believed,

and similar expressions are to be rendered in the same manner, *Si dice: Si crede — Si diceva: Si credeva.*

The expressions *I am told — I am forbidden — I am allowed — I am ordered — I am robbed — I am asked — I am promised*, and some others, are used in Italian after the following rule.

The Nominative with these Verbs becomes the Dative in Italian, and we say instead of *I am told*, *It is told to me*, and so on.

EXAMPLES.

<i>She</i> was promised to go there.	<i>Le fu promesso di andarvi.</i>
<i>The father</i> is told that etc.	<i>Al padre vien detto che etc.</i>
<i>You</i> will not be allowed.	<i>Non vi verrà, or sarà concesso.</i>
<i>Soldiers</i> are forbidden to go out after the retreat.	<i>Ai sodati è proibito di uscire dopo la ritirata.</i>

EXERCISE 18.

The Romans cultivated their land either by slaves purchased from the barbarians, and forced by corporal *comprare*

punishment to labour, or by *colonii partiarii*, to whom was

given a small share in the harvest as wages — Your
porzione (Gen.) salario

brothers are forbidden to go to the play this evening, but
commedia

to morrow they will be allowed to go there — In conversing
favellare

we sin in various ways and above all in the subject of con-
modo soprattutto materia

versation which we propose — My father was robbed of his
(Gen.) =

watch near the Exchange — As they know you like Madeira
presso Borsa (Dat.) piacere Madera

¹
wine very much, they will send you four bottles of it —
They have spoken on that subject, when they ought
(*Gen.*)

(to have been silent), and ¹really one cannot be too
aver taciuto *nel vero*

¹
careful not to exceed in words — For their courage and
guardarsi *eccedere*
intrepidity, they have been promised a large reward —
ampio

When we sincerely repent of our faults, we deserve par-
colpa =

don — They say he will be elected a member of Parliament
— I have been spoken to in favour of that poor old man —
a pro

Ugolino sought only to strengthen his own despotism by
— *assodare*
depriving all the magistrates of power, and by intimidating
intimorire

the archbishop Roger.
Ruggeri

LESSON XIX.

VERBS TAKING DIFFERENT AUXILIARIES.

Active Verbs are conjugated in the compound tenses with *Avere*: as, *Egli l'ha sempre amata*, He *has* always loved her.

Reflective and Impersonal Verbs take *Essere*: as, *Mi sono pentito*, I *have* repented — *È piovuto tutta la notte*, It *has* rained all night.

Intransitive Verbs of motion (1) take *Essere*: as, *Ella è caduta nel fiume*, She has fallen into the river — *Essi sono andati in Francia*, They are gone to France.

All transitive and intransitive verbs, united with the particle *si*, are conjugated with *Essere* in their compound tenses: as, Cato killed himself, *Catone si è ucciso*: and this applies also to the corresponding particles *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*. It is to be observed however, that when *me*, *te*, *sè*, *noi*, *voi*, are used instead of the above, the transitive verb must then have the auxiliary *Avere*: as, Cato has killed himself, *Catone ha ucciso sè*. The former however is to be preferred.

The intransitive verb *Vivere*, To live — *Correre*, To run — *Fuggire*, To flee, joined to a noun without a preposition, take the auxiliary *Avere*.

EXAMPLES.

He has lived for a short time. *Egli ha vissuto pochi anni*.
 You have run through all Europe. *Voi avete corso tutta l'Europa*.
 She has fled from every danger. *Essa ha fuggito ogni pericolo*.

The verb *Essere* is used when the noun is preceded by a preposition, which is understood in the above examples: as, *Egli è vissuto per pochi anni* — *Voi siete corso per tutta l'Europa* — *Essa è fuggita da ogni pericolo*. Hence, whenever any intransitive verb governs an Accusative, it requires *Avere*, because it then becomes active.

The Verbs *Volere*, *Dovere* and *Potere* which from their nature require the auxiliary *Avere*, can change it

(1) *Camminare*, *Passeggiare*, To walk — *Ballare*, To dance, and some others, are excepted and take *Avere* in their compound tenses.

into *Essere*, when they are united with a Verb which in its compound tenses takes the auxiliary *Essere*: as, *Non ho voluto*, or *non sono voluto andare*, I did not wish to go etc.

INTRANSITIVE VERBS

Conjugated with **AVERE**.

Cenare	<i>To sup</i>	Piangere	<i>To weep</i>
Dormire	— <i>sleep</i>	Pranzare	— <i>dine</i>
Giocare	— <i>play</i>	Ridere	— <i>laugh</i>
Gridare	— <i>cry out</i>	Sospirare	— <i>sigh</i>
Parlare	— <i>speak</i>	Starnutire	— <i>sneeze</i>
Pensare	— <i>think</i>	Tossire	— <i>cough</i>
Peccare	— <i>sin</i>	Viaggiare	— <i>travel</i>

INTRANSITIVE AND IMPERSONAL VERBS

Conjugated with **ESSERE**.

INTRANSITIVE.

Accadere	<i>To happen</i>	Convenire	<i>To be proper,</i> <i>to agree</i>
Addivenire	— <i>fall out</i>		
Andare	— <i>go</i>	Divenire	} — <i>become</i>
Apparire	— <i>appear</i>	Diventare	
Appartenere	— <i>belong</i>	Dispiacere	— <i>displease</i>
Arrivare	— <i>arrive</i>	Entrare	— <i>enter</i>
Avvenire	— <i>come, to</i> <i>pass</i>	Giacere	— <i>lie down</i>
Bastare	— <i>suffice</i>	Illanguidire	— <i>languish</i>
Cadere	— <i>fall</i>	Importare	— <i>concern</i>
Calere	— <i>care</i>	Nascere	— <i>be born, to</i> <i>spring</i>
Comparire	— <i>appear be-</i> <i>fore the</i> <i>judge</i>	Parere	— <i>seem</i>
		Partire	— <i>depart</i>
		Perire	— <i>perish</i>

Piacere	<i>To please</i>	Scaturire	<i>To spring, to issue</i>
Restare	— <i>stay</i>	Sopravenire	} — <i>come upon</i>
Rimanere	— <i>remain</i>	Sorvenire	
Rincrescere	— <i>be sorry</i>	Sparire	— <i>disappear</i>
Ristare	— <i>stop</i>	Stare	— <i>stay</i>
Ritornare	— <i>return</i>	Svanire	— <i>vanish</i>
Rivenire	— <i>come again</i>	Svenire	— <i>faint</i>
Riuscire	— <i>succeed</i>	Uscire	— <i>go out</i>
Scadere	— <i>devolve</i>	Venire	— <i>come</i>

IMPERSONAL.

Aggiornare	} <i>To be day light</i>	Didiacciare	} <i>To thaw</i>
Aggiornarsi		Dighiacciare	
Annottare	} — <i>grow dark</i>	Lampeggiare	} — <i>lighten</i>
Annottarsi		Folgorare	
Bisognare	— <i>be necessary</i>	Piovigginare	— <i>drizzle</i>

INTRANSITIVE AND IMPERSONAL VERBS

Conjugated with both **ESSERE** and **AVERE**.

INTRANSITIVE.

Affondare	<i>To sink</i>	Salire	<i>To go up, to arrive at</i>
Correre	— <i>run</i>	Scendere	— <i>descend</i>
Crescere	— <i>grow, to bring up</i>	Seguire	— <i>follow, to happen</i>
Fuggire	— <i>shun, to flee</i>	Smontare	— <i>alight, to go down</i>
Guarire	— <i>cure, to recover</i>	Sopravvivere	— <i>survive</i>
Morire	— <i>die, to kill</i>	Sortire	— <i>make a salary, to elect</i>
Pascere	— <i>feed</i>	Spicciare	— <i>issue, to gush out</i>
Passare	— <i>pass</i>	Valere	— <i>be worth</i>
Pervenire	— <i>attain</i>	Vivere	— <i>live</i>
Risolvere	— <i>resolve</i>		

IMPERSONAL.

Balenare	To lighten	Piovere	To rain
Diacciare	{ — freeze	Spruzzolare	— drizzle
Ghiacciare		Tuonare	{ — thunder
Grandinare	— hail	Tonare	
Nevicare	— snow		

EXERCISE 19. (1)

Mr. Lewis walked with me the whole day, and forgot
that I had not dined: it snowed so much that my cold
became worse, and I coughed and sneezed all night — I
(Adj.) alighted from my horse at my sister's, who invited me
= (Abl.) to dinner, but I could not stay, because I wished to return
pranzo home, where a friend of mine had resolved to wait for
a casa me — As soon as she saw her lover, she fainted in his arms,
Bene and her brother, thinking she was dead, became insane —
Those books never belonged to Peter's sister, but to my cousin — His speech has displeased the Parliament, and I am
(Dat.) sure he will never succeed, if he speaks in that manner —
modo My mother has always brought up and protected her like a
daughter — He who has lived a comfortable and voluptuous
agiato molle

(1) In the following Exercise when the verb in English is found in a simple preterite, the pupil is requested to translate it in the compound present: as, *I saw*, *Ho veduto*.

² life is ¹ but ³ little prepared to lead a hard and painful
non che condurre stentato
 one — That youth has almost arrived at the high degree
grado
 of glory, to which his grandfather attained — I have not
 gone out, because it rained, is raining, and perhaps will
 rain all day — I believe it thundered last night — Have you
² seen the ¹ postman? ³ No, he has not yet passed — Do not
portalettere
 believe that man, he has always fed every one with vain
 (Dat.) (Gen.)
 hopes — The English last month sank some French frigates
² and four (line-of-battle ships) — Daylight having appeared, I
vascelli di linea ¹ *giorno = farsi*
 passed the bridge and continued my journey.
viaggio.

LESSON XX.

VERBS GOVERNING DIFFERENT CASES.

Verbs always governing the **GENITIVE**, whatever case or preposition they may govern in English.

To abound in	<i>Abbondare</i>	To be angry	{ <i>Crucciarsi</i>
— account for	<i>Render ragione</i>	with	
— be acquainted with	{ <i>Informarsi</i>	— be armed	{ <i>Armarsi</i>
		with	
— adorn with,	{ <i>Adornare</i>	— be ashamed to, for	{ <i>Vergognarsi</i>
by			
— be alarmed	{ <i>Inquietarsi</i>	— be bathed	{ <i>Esser bagnato</i>
for, at, with		with	

To blush at, to	<i>Arrossire</i>
— care for	<i>Curarsi</i>
— be charged with	<i>Esser accusato</i> <i>Incaricarsi</i>
— be content with	<i>Contentarsi</i>
— be covered with	<i>Coprirsi</i>
— be charmed with, at	<i>Esser rapito</i>
— be crowned with	<i>Esser coronato</i>
— delight in	<i>Compiacersi</i>
— be displeased with	<i>Esser malcon-</i> <i>tento</i>
— be discontented at	<i>Esser sconcertato</i>
— enjoy, to be glad of	<i>Godere</i>
— be enraged at	<i>Irritarsi</i>
— fall in love with	<i>Invaghirsi</i>
— feed upon, with	<i>Nutrirsi</i>
— fill with	<i>Empire</i>
— forget	<i>Scordarsi</i> <i>Dimenticarsi</i>
— furnish with	<i>Fornire</i>
— glory in	<i>Gloriarsi</i>
— glow with	<i>Animarsi</i>
— invest with	<i>Investire</i>
— laugh at	<i>Ridersi</i>
— live upon	<i>Pascersi</i>
— mix with	<i>Mescolare</i>
— murmur at	<i>Lagnarsi</i>
— be occupied with	<i>Occuparsi</i>

To be offended at	<i>Offendersi</i>
— pant with	<i>Palpitare</i>
— part with	<i>Disfarsi</i>
— perceive	<i>Accorgersi</i>
— be piqued at	<i>Offendersi</i>
— be pleased with	<i>Esser contento</i>
— pretend	<i>Pretendere</i>
— pride one's self upon	<i>Gloriarsi</i>
— profit by	<i>Approfittarsi</i>
— be provided with	<i>Provvedersi</i>
— recollect	<i>Sovvenirsi</i>
— rejoice in	<i>Rallegrarsi</i>
— remember	<i>Rammentarsi</i>
— repent	<i>Pentirsi</i>
— be revenged on	<i>Vendicarsi</i>
— reward with	<i>Ricompensare</i>
— be satisfied with	<i>Contentarsi</i>
— seize on	<i>Impadronirsi</i>
— be scandalized at	<i>Scandalizzarsi</i>
— be sorry for	<i>Esser dispiacente</i>
— spread with	<i>Spargere</i>
— strive for	<i>Ingegnarsi</i>
— be surprised at	<i>Esser sorpreso</i>
— thank for, with	<i>Ringraziare</i>
— be transported with	<i>Esser rapito</i>
— tremble at, with, for	<i>Tremare</i>

Totriumph in, {	Trionfare	To want	Aver bisogno
over		— weep at	Piangere
— trust to, in	Fidarsi	— wonder at	Maravigliarsi

To be pleased and to be displeased may be rendered also by *piacere* and *dispiacere*. The Nominative with these Verbs becomes the Dative in Italian, and nouns, with the preposition *with* prefixed to them, are to be put in the Nominative case: consequently, *I was very much pleased with the ball last night*, is to be rendered by, *The ball pleased me very much last night*, *Il ballo mi piacque moltissimo ieri sera* — I am excessively displeased with his insolent manner, *Il suo modo insolente mi dispiace estremamente*.

Verbs always governing the **DATIVE**,
whatever case or preposition they govern in English.

To associate	{	Associarsi	To reflect on	Riflettere
with			— renounce	Rinunciare
— attend on		Attendere	— resemble	Rassomigliare
— answer		Rispondere	— resist	Resistere
— be busied in		Occuparsi	— resolve	{
— comply with		Conformarsi	upon, on	Risolversi
— be concern-	{	Interessarsi	— smile upon	Sorridere
ed			— succeed in	{
— gratify		Aggradire		Succedere,
— hurt		Nuocere	— survive	Riuscire
— inspect		Vegliare	— outlive	{
— join in, with		Unirsi	— take a de-	Sopravvivere
— mind		Badare	light or	{
— oppose		Opporsi	pleasure	Prender pia-
— please		Piacere	in	cere
— provide for		Provvedere	— think of	Pensare

Pensare followed by a noun takes the Dative: as, *Egli pensa a lei continuamente*, He continually thinks

of her—When it precedes a Verb in the Infinitive Mood, it then requires the preposition *di*: as, *Penso di andarvi*, I think of going there.

The following take the **DATIVE** of the **PERSON**,
and the **ACCUSATIVE** of the **THING**.

To ask one for a thing	<i>Chiedere</i>	una cosa ad uno
— conceal a thing from one	<i>Nascondere</i>	. . . . .
— confer a thing on one	<i>Conferire</i>	. . . . .
— do one a thing	<i>Fare</i>	. . . . .
— envy one a thing	<i>Invidiare</i>	. . . . .
— forgive one a thing	<i>Perdonare</i>	. . . . .
— give one a thing	<i>Dare</i>	. . . . .
— hide a thing from one	<i>Tacere</i>	. . . . .
— impose a thing on one	<i>Imporre</i>	. . . . .
— lend one a thing	<i>Prestare</i>	. . . . .
— order one a thing	<i>Ordinare</i>	. . . . .
— owe one a thing	<i>Dovere</i>	. . . . .
— present one with a thing	<i>Presentare</i>	. . . . .
— promise one a thing	<i>Promettere</i>	. . . . .
— rob, to steal a thing		
from one	<i>Rubare</i>	. . . . .
— reproach one for a thing	<i>Rimproverare</i>	. . . . .
— take away a thing from		
one	<i>Portar via</i>	. . . . .
— teach one a thing	<i>Insegnare</i>	. . . . .
— tell one a thing	<i>Dire</i>	. . . . .
— withhold a thing from one	<i>Ricusare</i>	. . . . .

The following govern different cases or prepositions.

To admit of	<i>Ammettere</i>	Acc.
— attend upon, to	<i>Attendere</i>	Dat. or Acc.
— be born of	<i>Nascere</i>	Gen. or Abl.
— call at, upon	<i>Passare</i>	Abl.
— call for	<i>Chiedere</i>	Acc.

To confide in	<i>Fidarsi</i>	Gen. or Dat.
— congratulate one upon	{ <i>Felicitar uno</i>	Gen.
— consist of, in		Prep. in
— depend on, upon	<i>Dipendere</i>	Abl.
— dispense with	<i>Dispensare</i>	Abl.
— be displeased at	<i>Non trovar piacere</i>	Dat. or Prep. in
— be dressed in	<i>Vestirsi</i>	Gen.
— enter upon, into	<i>Entrare</i>	Prep. in
— fall in with, to meet with	<i>Incontrarsi, abbattersi</i>	Prep. in: <i>Incontrare</i> Acc.
— flee from	<i>Fuggire</i>	Dat. Acc. or Abl.
— fire at	<i>Far fuoco</i>	{ Prep. sopra or addosso
— be fond of	<i>Amar con passione</i>	
— go out from, of	<i>Uscire</i>	Acc.
— guard one's self against	{ <i>Guardarsi</i>	Gen. or Abl.
— hear from		Abl.
— hear of	<i>Ricever notizie</i>	Abl.
— hinder from	<i>Intendere</i>	Acc.
— inquire into, after, for	<i>Impedire</i>	Gen. or Abl.
— listen to	{ <i>Ricercare</i>	Acc.
— look at, on		Acc.
— look for, after	<i>Ascoltare</i>	Acc.
— obey	<i>Guardare, osservare</i>	Dat. or Acc.
— participate in	<i>Cercare</i>	Acc.
— persevere in	<i>Obbedire</i>	Dat. or Acc.
— be pleased at	<i>Partecipare</i>	Dat. Gen.
— rebel against	<i>Perseverare</i>	Prep. in
— be surrounded with	<i>Trovar piacere</i>	Dat. or Prep. in
— satisfy	<i>Ribellarsi</i>	Dat. or Abl.
— be seized with	{ <i>Esser circondato</i>	Abl.
— take leave of		Abl.
— taste of	<i>Soddisfare</i>	Dat. or Acc.
	<i>Esser preso</i>	Abl.
	<i>Prender congedo</i>	Abl.
	<i>Gustare</i>	Gen. or Acc.

To be threatened	{	<i>Esser minacciato</i>	Abl.
with			
— wait for		<i>Aspettare</i>	Acc.
— intermeddle	{	<i>Frammettersi</i>	} Take fra or tra gen- erally, and in sometimes
with		<i>Inframmettersi</i>	
— interpose be-		<i>Intrammetersi</i>	
tween		<i>Trammetersi</i>	

Observe that verbs compounded of a preposition prefixed, have generally that same preposition repeated for the government of a noun connected with them.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Addurre ad un luogo</i>	To convey to a place.
<i>Congratularsi con uno</i>	To congratulate one.
<i>Incorrere in un pericolo</i>	To run into danger.
<i>Frammettersi fra due rivali</i>	To interpose between two rivals.

The preposition however, though frequently employed as above, is far from being invariably so, an exception often arising from the case being regulated solely by the primitive verb, the government of which supersedes that of its annexed preposition: as, *Dipendo da voi*, I depend upon you.

EXERCISE 20.

When I think of the ingratitude of my cousin, I am always ashamed to meet with him; it is however necessary for me to forgive him his faults and not to oppose the will of God — I cannot recollect what he said to me — Your sons deceived me, but they will repent it — I perceived in time

a

that he intended meeting my uncle — I know you have for-
aver l'intenzione (Inf.)

given your enemies, and I am glad of it — My son saw her
at my aunt's, and immediately fell in love with her, but I
da *di tratto*

know she laughs at him — If that man does not desist from
intermeddling with other people's business, he will soon
affare (pl.)

repent it — You do not know how to profit by the advice of
consiglio

your uncle, neither do you think of your own interest, nor of
nè *nè*

that of your sons — Trust to him and do not mind any one
else — The success of the undertaking depends upon that

successo *impresa*

man who lives upon the misfortunes of others, and who would
disgrazia

not blush to gratify his avarice (at the expense) of honour.
a spese

EXERCISE 21.

He seems to be very much occupied with the charge
impiego

that is entrusted to him — She reflected a few moments and

=

then resolved upon disclosing the truth — I thank you for the
scoprire

kindness you have shewn my son: you confer a favour on
(*Dat.*)

him by the promise of your protection — As we know that
your brother is very fond of hunting, we will call at his house
to-morrow, in order that he may join our party — The phy-

compagnia *me-*

sician has ordered my sister a tepid bath every other day,
dico *tiepido*

and he has promised her some rides in the summer
cavalcata *estivo*

months — At this moment she went out of the room, and he

reproached her for it — They prided themselves upon their knowledge and experience, and would not profit by the *sapere*

advice of those who wished them well; therefore their con-
volere bene

duct admits of no excuse — It is true he was sorry for their loss, but not surprised at the cause — He rejoiced in having a friend whose courage and virtue triumphed over every difficulty — They persevered so unceasingly in their entreaties,

incessantemente supplica
that at last he complied with their request, but now he is
dimanda

threatened with the seizure of his property.
sequestro

LESSON XXI.

ADVERB

An adverb is a word that qualifies the meaning of a verb, an adjective, or another adverb with regard to *manner, place or time.*

Many Italian adverbs are formed from adjectives by adding *mente* to them, as in English by adding *ly*: as, From *prudente*, prudent: *prudentemente*, prudently.

If an adjective ends in *le* or in *re*, preceded by a vowel, the final *e* is cut off when *mente* is annexed: as, *Facile*, easy: *facilmente*, easily—*Particolare*, particular: *particolarmente*, particularly.

When adjectives have a different termination for each gender, the feminine termination is adopted in forming the adverb: as, From *savio* (mas.) *savia* (fem.), wise: *saviamente*, wisely.

Adverbs may be formed in the superlative degree by changing the last vowel of the adjective positive into *issimamente*: as, From *onesto*, honest: *onestissimamente*, very or most honestly.

Should the adjective end in *io*, *io* is changed into *issimamente*: as, From *savio*, wise: *savissimamente*: very or most wisely.

Adjectives ending in *co* and *go* that take an *h* in the plural, require it also before *issimamente*: as, From *ricco*, rich: *ricchissimamente* very or most richly.

The following adverbial superlatives are irregular, viz. *Bene*, well: *benissimo*, very well — *Poco*, little: *pochissimo*, very little — *Spesso*, often, has both *spessissimo*, and *spessissimamente*, very often.

Observe that *poco*, *pochissimo* — *spesso*, *spessissimo* are used adjectively as well as adverbially.

Sometimes the simple adjective in the masculine gender only, without *mente*, is used for an adverb, as Petrarch says.

<i>Non sa come amor sana e come</i>	No one knows how love heals
<i>ancide,</i>	and how it slays,
<i>Chi non sa come dolce ella so-</i>	Who does not know how soft-
<i>spira,</i>	ly she sighs,
<i>E come dolce parla, e dolce</i>	And how sweetly she speaks,
<i>ride.</i>	and how sweetly she smiles.

ADVERBS AND ADVERBIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Abbasso	Below	A bocca	{ By word of
Abbastanza	Enough	A voce	
A sufficienza		A caso	{ By chance
A bella posta	With a design	Per avventura	
A bello studio	On purpose	A capriccio	Capriciously

Adagio	<i>Slowly, gently</i>	Appunto	<i>Just so</i>
Ad alta voce	<i>Aloud</i>	A piedi	<i>On foot</i>
Addietro	<i>Formerly</i>	A posta	<i>On purpose</i>
Adesso	<i>Now</i>	A poco a poco	<i>By little and little</i>
A destra	<i>On, or to the right</i>	A proposito	<i>In time</i>
A dispetto	<i>Out of contempt</i>	Assai	<i>Much, very</i>
Affatto	<i>Quite</i>	Assai volte	<i>Many times</i>
Affè	<i>Faith, upon my faith</i>	A sinistra	<i>On, or to the left</i>
A fondo	<i>Thoroughly</i>	Avanti	<i>Forward</i>
Alla Francese	<i>After the French</i>	A vicenda	<i>In turns</i>
all' Inglese,	<i>English</i>	Bel bello	<i>Softly</i>
all' Italiana,	<i>Italian, Spanish</i>	Ben bene	<i>Entirely</i>
alla Spagnuo-	<i>manner, or fa-</i>	Bene	<i>Well</i>
la etc.	<i>shion</i>	Cioè	<i>That is</i>
Alla stordita	<i>At random</i>	Circa	<i>Nearly</i>
All'opposto	<i>On the contrary</i>	Colà	} <i>There</i>
Allora	<i>Then</i>	Costà	
Almeno	<i>At least</i>	Costi	
Al più	<i>At most</i>	Come	<i>As, how, like</i>
Alquanto	<i>Somewhat</i>	Così così	<i>So so</i>
Altrimenti	<i>Otherwise</i>	Così	<i>So</i>
Altrove	<i>Elsewhere</i>	Da burla	<i>In jest</i>
A lungo	<i>For a long time</i>	Da parte	<i>Aside</i>
A mano destra	<i>On the right hand</i>	Dappertutto	<i>Every where</i>
A mano sinistra	<i>On the left hand</i>	Davvero	<i>In earnest</i>
A mia, tua etc.	<i>According to my</i>	Da vicino	<i>Near</i>
fantasia	<i>thy etc. fancy</i>	Dall'altro can-	<i>On the other</i>
A mio, tuo, suo	<i>Against my, thy</i>	to	<i>hand</i>
malgrado	<i>his will</i>	Dal canto mio,	<i>In my, thy,</i>
A muta a muta	<i>By turns</i>	tuo, suo, no-	<i>his, our etc.</i>
Anche	<i>Yet</i>	stro etc.	<i>turn</i>
Ancora	<i>Also, likewise</i>	Del pari	<i>Likewise</i>
Anzi	<i>Rather, on the</i>	Del tutto	<i>Entirely</i>
	<i>contrary</i>	Dentro	<i>Within</i>
Anzi che no	<i>Rather</i>	Dibuna voglia	<i>Willingly</i>
Appresso	<i>Afterwards</i>	Di buon' ora	<i>Betimes</i>
		Di fronte	<i>Abreast</i>

Di gran lunga	<i>By far</i>
Di là	<i>Thence, thither</i>
Dimala voglia	<i>Unwillingly</i>
Dinanzi	<i>Before</i>
Di nuovo	<i>Again</i>
Di più	<i>Besides</i>
Di presente	<i>Immediately</i>
Di quà	<i>Hence, hither</i>
Di quando in quando	<i>Now and then</i>
Di soppiatto	<i>Secretly</i>
Dietro	<i>Behind</i>
Dirimpetto	<i>Opposite</i>
Domani	<i>To-morrow</i>
Donde	<i>Whence</i>
Dopo dimani	<i>After to-morrow</i>
Dove	<i>Where</i>
Egualemente	<i>Equally, alike</i>
Eziandio	<i>Also, even</i>
Forse	<i>Perhaps</i>
Fra breve	<i>Shortly</i>
Fra poco	<i>In a short time,</i>
Frattanto	<i>In the mean time</i>
Finalmente	<i>Finally</i>
Finora	<i>Till now</i>
Fuor di proposito	<i>Improperly</i>
Fuori	<i>Without, out</i>
Già	<i>Already, now</i>
	<i>Formerly, indeed</i>
Giammai	<i>Never</i>
Giù	<i>Below, down</i>
Il più delle volte	<i>Most times</i>
Indietro	<i>Backwards</i>
Indi	<i>Thence, after, then</i>
In fuori	<i>Outwards</i>

Inoltre	<i>Besides</i>
Intanto	<i>In the mean while</i>
Intorno	<i>About</i>
In qualche parte	<i>Somewhere</i>
In questo mentre	<i>Just now</i>
Insieme	<i>Together</i>
Ivi	<i>There</i>
Ieri l'altro	<i>The day before yesterday</i>
Ieri	<i>Yesterday</i>
Laggiù	<i>There below</i>
Lassù	<i>There above</i>
Lontano	<i>Far</i>
Lungi	
Mai sempre	<i>For ever</i>
Mai	<i>Never</i>
Male	<i>Not well, wrong</i>
Mal volentieri	<i>Unwillingly reluctantly</i>
Mentre	<i>While</i>
	<i>(Only with a negative) not at all</i>
Mica	
Molto	<i>Much</i>
Nemmeno	<i>Not even</i>
Neppure	
Niente affatto	<i>Nothing at all</i>
No	<i>No, not</i>
Non	
Oggi	<i>To-day</i>
Ognora	<i>Always</i>
Or	<i>Now</i>
Ora	
Or ora	<i>Just now</i>
Ora... ora	<i>Sometimes.... sometimes</i>

Orgoglio-	}	<i>Proudly</i>
samente		
Ove		<i>Where</i>
Palesemente		<i>Openly</i>
Passo passo	}	<i>Step by step</i>
Lemme lemme		
Peggior		<i>Worse</i>
Per sempre		<i>For ever</i>
Per tempo		<i>Early</i>
Per lo più		<i>At most</i>
Piano		<i>Softly</i>
Pian piano		<i>Very softly</i>
Piuttosto		<i>Rather</i>
Più presto		<i>Sooner</i>
Più volte		<i>Several times</i>
Poi	}	<i>Then</i>
Poscia		
Pressochè		<i>Almost</i>
Presso apoco	}	<i>As near as possible</i>
Presto		<i>Quickly, soon</i>
Prima		<i>Before</i>
Punto		<i>At all</i>
Qua	}	<i>Here</i>
Qui		
Quaggiù		<i>Here below</i>
Qualche volta		<i>Sometimes</i>
Quasi		<i>Almost</i>

Quassù	<i>Here above</i>
Quinci	<i>Hence</i>
Quindi	<i>Thence, after</i>
Qui vicino	<i>Just by</i>
Quivi	<i>There</i>
Rare volte	<i>Seldom</i>
Sempre	<i>Always</i>
Si	<i>Yes, so</i>
Siccome	<i>As</i>
Solamente	} <i>Only</i>
Solo	
Soltanto	
Sopra	} <i>Up, above</i>
Su	
Sotto	<i>Under</i>
Spesso	} <i>Often</i>
Spesse volte	
Subito	<i>Immediately</i>
Talora	<i>Sometimes</i>
Tardi	<i>Late</i>
Tempo fa	<i>Once</i>
Testè	<i>Just now</i>
Tosto	<i>Soon</i>
Troppo	<i>Too much</i>
Tuttavia	<i>Still</i>
Ultimamente	<i>Lately, at last</i>
Unicamente	<i>Only</i>
Volentieri	<i>Willingly</i>

When *rather* precedes an adjective or participle past, it is expressed by *anzi che no*, and the adjective may be placed between *anzi* and *che no*: as, *They are rather modest*, *Esse sono anzi modeste che no*.

Già is sometimes used as an expletive for the sake of emphasis, when it is generally equivalent to *indeed*: as, *Non già ch'egli lo creda. . .* Not indeed that he believes it.

Mai and *Giammai* in answering a question mean *never*. When they are used with a verb, they require a negative before them. In conditional or doubtful phrases they mean *ever*.

EXAMPLES.

Avele veduto il Signor Ward? Have you seen Mr. Ward?

Mai.

Never.

Non vado mai da lui.

I never go to his house.

Se mai lo vedete, ditegli....

If ever you see him tell him...

No is employed, as a negative, placed in a detached manner at the beginning or end of a phrase. In other cases *non* is used, as, *No, son io*, *No*, it is I — *Non mi piace*, It does *not* please me.

After the verbs *Dire*, *Rispondere*, *Credere*, *Sperare* etc. *no* and *sì* take *di*: as, *Ei disse di sì ed essa rispose di no*, He said *yes* and she answered *no*.

If the personal pronoun *lo* follows *non*, they are contracted in one word: as instead of *Non lo vedo*, we say *Nol vedo*, I do *not* see *him* — *Nol voglio*, I do *not* wish *it*. This mode of expression is never used before a vowel, *s impura*, and *z*.

Sì is used instead of *così*: as, *Il giudice rimase sì convinto, che non potè condannarlo*, The judge remained so convinced that he could not condemn him.

Care must be taken not to confound the two adverbs *Allora* and *Dunque*. The former means *at that time*, the latter *consequently*.

EXAMPLES.

Comandò che fosse fatto morire in croce, siccome allora si usava. He ordered him to be crucified as it was *then* the custom.

Che farete voi dunque?

What will you do then?

Punto and *mica* strengthen the phrase : as, *Ella nè allora nè poi il cenobbe punto*, She did not know him *at all* either then or since—*Son novelle vere non son mica favole*, The news is true and *by no means* a fable.

Sometimes the adverb with the masculine article prefixed has the force of the noun : as, *Il dove* — *Il quando* — *Il come* — *Il sì* — *Il no* — *Il perchè* etc. and sometimes even without the article.

EXAMPLES.

<i>E domandato da lei del perchè e del come.</i>	And being asked by her <i>about the reason and manner (of the why and the how).</i>
<i>Che sì e no nel capo mi tenzona.</i>	That <i>yes and no</i> contend in my head.

Adverbs denoting locality in a manner corresponding with the three classes of demonstrative pronouns.

FIRST CLASS.

Where one speaks
or writes.

Qui } *Here* }
Qua }

SECOND CLASS.

Where the person
is spoken to.

Costi } *There* }
Costà }

THIRD CLASS.

Distant
from both.

Li, coli } *There* }
Là, colà }

Some Grammarians are of opinion that the adverbs of place *qui*, *costi*, *li* convey a more limited meaning than *qua*, *costà*, *là*, that the former should be used in speaking of a house, village, town, etc. and the latter of a province kingdom etc. but this distinction is not attended to in common conversation.

EXERCISE 22.

She always does every thing capriciously, and now and then she is sorry to have acted wrong: I asked her, against
fare
my will, if she desired me to accompany her, and she
volere *accompagnare*
answered me proudly no — Did you see my son? No, where
is he then?—Last night robbers came (to my house) and
da me
as soon as I heard a noise, I cried out « who is there? »
=
forte
and afterwards I reluctantly got up and looked every where,
alzarsi
but they were already gone — You never say any thing
fuggire
to your son, but let me tell you he is rather proud, and
permettere
always speaks badly of every one — I know your sisters read
₃ ₁ ₂ ₂
aloud by turns every evening, on the contrary mine seldom
₁
have a book in their hands — The dinner is already prepar-
=
ed, but they are not yet arrived; I think they delay on
ritardare
purpose, probably, in order not to meet that man, who
(in my opinion) is the most insupportable person I ever
secondo me
saw — Why did you not call upon us the day before yest-
erday? Because we were then in the country, and are only
₂ ₁
just now returned — Mr. Reynolds comes to see us sometimes
—
in the morning and sometimes in the evening — You must
=
= go instantly. Where? The time and place you will learn
quando *dove* *sapere*

shortly, in the mean time prepare to depart — We dine
prepararsi
after the English and dress after the Italian fashion — She
¹ ¹
is rather shy, I found that out by chance.
acerbetto scoprire lo

LESSON XXII.

PREPOSITION.

A preposition is an indeclinable word which has the power of carrying the meaning of the part of speech to which it is joined, and serves also to connect words with one another.

We have treated of the prepositions *Con*, *In*, *Per*, *Su*, when we spoke of the article: we shall now lay down particular rules for the use of *Da* and *Per*.

DA

Da is used like *by* to signify instrumentality or agency: as, *Essi vennero feriti da una saetta*, They were wounded *by* an arrow — *Essa fu lodata da tutti*, She was praised *by* every body.

It is used like *from* to denote difference or separation of any sort: as, *Da sera a mattina*, From evening to morning — *Da Londra a Parigi*, From London to Paris — *Essi sono assai diversi da noi*, They are very different *from* us.

With numerals it signifies *about*: as, *Noi rimanemmo a Londra da tre mesi*, We remained in London *about* three months.

It also expresses an anterior date: as, *Da due mesi*, For these two months past — *Da piccolina*, Since my childhood.

It expresses the *moral* or *physical* qualities of a person: as, *Uomo da poco*, A man good for nothing — *Fanciulla da marito*, A girl of a proper age to be married.

It has the signification of *like* or *as*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Egli vive da Signore.</i>	He lives <i>like</i> a Lord.
<i>Noi combattemmo da eroi</i>	We fought <i>like</i> heroes.
<i>Essa l'ama da fratello.</i>	She loves him <i>like</i> a brother.
<i>Voi avete agito da amico.</i>	You have acted <i>as</i> a friend.
<i>Da galantuomo.</i>	<i>As</i> I am an honest man.

When used with Infinitives it signifies *expediency* or *necessity*; *property* or *duty*: as, *Ei non è uomo da disprezzare* or *da disprezzarsi*, He is not a man to be condemned — *Essa è piuttosto donna da commendare* or *da commendarsi*, She is rather a Lady to be commended.

Used with primitive or personal pronouns, it signifies *alone*: as, *La padrona non vuole che andiate da voi*, The mistress does not wish you to go *alone* — *Molte malattie guariscono da sè*, Many maladies get well *by themselves*.

This preposition, put before personal pronouns, answers to the English *with us* or *in our country*: as, *With us* both Italian and Latin are spoken, *Da noi si parla Italiano, e Latino*. Should however the nation be mentioned, *presso* is used: as, *With the Romans* the senatorial order was the most distinguished, *Presso i Romani l'ordine Senatorio era il più distinto*.

It is used for brevity to signify *at*, *in* or *to the habitation* of a person: as, Go to my sister's, *Andate da mia sorella* (1):

(1) If the substantive be without a pronoun, the ablative article is used; as *Andrò dal Senatore* (that is, *a casa del Senatore*), I shall go to the senator's.

When there is a motion to the habitation,

To my house	} are expressed by	{	<i>Da me, or a casa mia.</i>
To thy house			<i>Da te, or a casa tua.</i>
To his house			<i>Da lui, or a casa sua.</i>
To her house			<i>Da lei, or a casa sua.</i>
To our house			<i>Da noi, or a casa nostra.</i>
To your house			<i>Da voi, or a casa vostra.</i>
To their house			<i>Da loro, or a casa loro (1).</i>

The motion in such phrases is often not directly mentioned, but merely implied; for instance, *Ieri pranzò da me il Dottore Arnould*, Yesterday Dr. Arnould dined at my house — *Dimani sarò da vostro zio*, To-morrow I shall be at your uncle's.

When a person's own *house* is meant in the sense of *home*, a *casa* or *in casa* is used, without the possessive pronoun: as, *Vado a casa*, I am going home — *Non è in casa*, He is not at home.

PER

Per is used more especially with Infinitives to signify *motive, end or object*: as, *Farò di tutto per compiacervi*, I will do every thing *in order to* content you.

After the Verbs *Stare* and *Essere* followed by an Infinitive, it means *To be on the point of*: *To be about*: *To be in danger*.

(1) The mode of signifying *to my house, to thy house* etc. by *da me, da te* etc. is not to be used on all occasions indiscriminately, for it carries with it a supposition of the person, or persons mentioned being then *in* his, her, or their house; consequently, *I am going home*, must be expressed by *Vado a casa*, and not *Vado da me*, which would convey quite a different sense, to wit, *I am going somewhere by myself* (that is without being compelled or conducted). By the same rule, *He is not at home*, must be expressed by *Non è in casa*.

This mode is employed in those cases, where no ambiguity can arise: for instance — *Andate da me, e dite al mio servo....* Go to my house, and tell my servant....

EXAMPLES.

<i>Ella era per partire quando....</i>	She was on the point of starting when....
<i>Stava per dirmi, ma....</i>	He was about to tell me, but....
<i>Egli stette per cadere.</i>	He was in danger of falling.

It is used to denote *cause*: as, *Per le continue piogge ogni rivo è divenuto un fiume*, By the continued rains every rivulet is become a river — *Ella divenne quasi mutola per vergogna*, She became almost mute with shame.

It is used with nouns to signify *space of time or place*: as, *Per un giorno si attribuisca a ciascun l'onore*, Let the honour be attributed to each for one day — *Essi passarono per Milano*, They passed through or by Milan.

It serves to signify *the nature or character of persons and things*: as, *Essendo stato un pessimo uomo in vita, in morte è reputato per Santo*, Having been a very bad man while living, in death he is reputed a Saint — *Qui si prende il vizio per la virtù*, Here they mistake vice for virtue.

It is used in *supplications and adjurations*: as, *Per l'amor del Cielo*, For the love of Heaven.

It is used with various nouns adverbially: as, *Per accidente*, By accident — *Per giorno*, Daily.

When placed before a verb or a substantive, it answers to the English words *However, Whatever*: as, *Whatever power he may have*, *Per potere che abbia*.

It is used in a *distributive sense*: as, *Essi hanno ricevuto quattro lire sterline per uno*, They have received four pounds a piece.

PREPOSITIONS

With the cases they govern.(1)

Accanto	{	<i>Near by, at the side of, about</i>	Dat. Gen.
Allato			
Addosso		<i>On, upon one's back, about, at</i>	Dat.
A fronte		<i>Opposite, over against</i>	Dat. Gen.
A guisa	{	<i>Like</i>	Gen.
A modo			
Anzi		<i>Before</i>	Acc.
Appetto		<i>Opposite, in comparison to</i>	Dat. Gen.
Appiè		<i>At the foot</i>	Gen.
Appresso		<i>With, near, by, next</i>	Acc. Gen. Dat.
Avanti		<i>Before, in the presence of</i>	Dat. Acc. Abl.
Circa		<i>About, concerning</i>	Acc. Dat. Gen.
Contra	{	<i>Against, over against</i>	Gen. Acc. Dat.
Contro			
Dentro		<i>Within</i>	Dat. Acc.
Dietro		<i>Behind</i>	Dat. Acc. G. Abl.
Di là		<i>On that side</i>	Abl.
Di qua		<i>On this side</i>	
Discosto		<i>Far</i>	Abl. Dat.
Dopo		<i>After</i>	Acc. Gen. Dat.
Eccettuato		<i>Except, but</i>	Acc.
Entro		<i>Within, in</i>	Acc. Dat.
Fino, Sino		<i>Till, until, as far as, to</i>	Dat. Acc.
Fra, Tra		<i>Within, between, besides, among</i>	Acc.
Fuori		<i>Beside, besides, out, outside</i>	Gen. Acc.
Fuorchè		<i>Except</i>	Acc.
In mezzo		<i>In the middle</i>	Dat. Gen. Acc.
Infuori		<i>Except, but, excepted</i>	Abl.
Intorno		<i>About, round about</i>	Dat.
Lungi	{	<i>Far</i>	Abl. Dat.
Lontano			

(1) The case first specified, is the one most generally used.

Lunghesso	{	<i>Along, near</i>	Acc.
Lungo			
Mediante		<i>Through, by means of, for</i>	Acc.
Oltre, oltra		<i>Beyond, besides</i>	Dat. Acc.
Prima		<i>Before</i>	Gen.
Presso		<i>Near, almost</i>	Dat. Gen. Acc.
Quanto, In	{	<i>As, far, as to, as</i>	Dat.
quanto			
Rasente		<i>Close to</i>	Acc. Dat.
Rimpetto;	{	<i>Over against, opposite</i>	Dat.
Dirimpetto			
Salvo		<i>Except, but, save</i>	Acc.
Secondo		<i>According to</i>	Acc.
Senza		<i>Without</i>	Acc. Gen.
Sopra, sopra		<i>On, upon, by</i>	Acc. Gen. Dat.
Sotto		<i>Under</i>	Acc. Gen. D. Abl.
Su, Su per		<i>Upon, on</i>	Acc.
Tranne		<i>Except</i>	Acc.
Verso		<i>Towards, to</i>	Acc. Gen.
Vicino		<i>Near</i>	Dat. Gen.

Infuori is placed after the case it governs: as, *Da voi infuori*, *Except you*.

Salvo and *Vicino* may be declined.

EXAMPLES.

Perdemmo tutto salvo or salva We lost every thing *but* life.
la vita.

La nave era vicino or vicina The ship was *near* the har-
al porto. bour.

EXERCISE 23.

In consequence of the snow, none of the mails are
corriere
arrived except (that one) from Leghorn—Mr. Slater and his
quello (*Gen.*) *Livorno*

family were on the point of leaving this, when they received
partire di qui

a message informing them, that the road ⁴ was impassable
ambasciata avvertire strada impraticabile

¹ between ² Rome and ³ Sienna — In going from Marseilles
bile Siena Marsiglia

to Naples in the Leopold the second, we were at sea about
stare in

seven days—They will return towards the end of the month in
order to go to the baths of Lucca — He was kept in prison
bagno — tenere

for ten years. Why? Because he was about to kill the governor — In our country we prefer the useful to the ornamental,
si apparente

but with the French they sacrifice much to please the imagination —
si

All speak well of the Misses Reynolds, but Mr. B. amongst others praises them very much — The enemy retired
ritirarsi

in good order, but left on the field of battle about eight thousand men dead and wounded (if I mistake not) — In
tra se non la sgarro

speaking of his son, you told me that he was a youth not to be despised, but last night at my sister's he sat down by
assidersi

my daughter and told her some things, which in prudence
per

(cannot be related again): to-day I have met with him,
non sono da ridirsi

and I was on the point of telling him some thing to the purpose — I waited for you till two o'clock. Where? At your aunt's. I swear as I am an honest man I was there. At
giurare

what o'clock? At eleven. You are in the right; at that hour I was (taking a walk) by the side of the river.
passteggiando

LESSON XXIII.

CONJUNCTION.

A Conjunction is a part of speech that is chiefly used to connect sentences; so as out of two or more sentences to make but one: it sometimes connects only words.

E	<i>And</i>
O	<i>Or, Either</i>
Ovvero, Oppure	<i>Or, Or else</i>
Ossia	<i>Or,</i>
Non che	<i>{ Not only, not merely, not only</i>
	<i>{ not, much less</i>
Non.... che	<i>But, except</i>
E.... e	<i>{</i>
Si.... sì	
Non.... se non	<i>Both.... and</i>
Non.... altro che	<i>Nothing but,</i>
Non.... altra cosa che	<i>Nothing else but</i>
Pure	<i>Nothing but</i>
Nondimeno	<i>{</i>
Nulladimeno	
Non pertanto	
Ciò non ostante	
Tuttavia	
Con tutto ciò	<i>However</i>
Nè	<i>Nevertheless</i>
Adunque	<i>Notwithstanding</i>
Dunque	<i>For all that, yet</i>
Per conseguenza	<i>{</i>
Posciachè	
Poichè	<i>Nor, neither</i>
Giacchè	<i>Then</i>
Dacchè	<i>Therefore</i>
	<i>Consequently</i>
	<i>Since, after</i>
	<i>Since</i>
	<i>Since, from the time</i>

Ma		But
Laonde	}	
Perciò		Therefore
Per la qual cosa		For which reason
Pertanto		
Perciocchè	}	
Perocchè		Because, for
Perchè		
Non prima.... che		No sooner.... than
Però		However, therefore

E and *O* before a vowel take the letter *d*: as, *Io ed Antonio*, I and Anthony — *Il Signor Grignon od Ella*, Mr. Grignon or she.

Non che in an affirmative sentence, having *ma* expressed or understood for its correlative, signifies *but even, but also*. On the contrary, *non che* in a negative sentence strengthens the negation.

EXAMPLES.

<i>L' amore è di tanta potenza</i>	Love is of such power that it
<i>che ha vinto i fortissimi uo-</i>	has conquered not only ten-
<i>mini non che le tenere</i>	der women <i>but even</i> the
<i>donne.</i>	stoutest men.
<i>Nulla speranza gli conforta</i>	No hope of rest or <i>even</i> of less
<i>mai non che di posa, ma</i>	pain ever comforts them.
<i>di minor pena.</i>	

Nè, if placed after the verb, requires another negative before it: as, *Io non istimo nè lei nè suo zio*, I esteem *neither* her *nor* her uncle: but we say. *Nè io lo conosco*, *Nor* do I know him.

Pure, used expletively, gives an elegant emphasis to a phrase: when followed by *troppo*, it means *too well, but too well*.

EXAMPLES.

Dite pure.

Say now

Andate pure.

Do go.

Essa lo sa pur troppo.

She knows it but too well.

EXERCISE 24.

Buffalmacco asked how that stone (was called) and Ca-
 — *pietra avesse nome*
 landrino answered « What have we to do with the name,
 — (Gen.)

¹ since we know its ³ property » — She said to him I can ¹
ne virtù

⁴ neither esteem you nor your friend any more, and he an-
² swered nothing else but « I deserve it » — He saw no other
⁵ possible means to obtain her, but that of (running away) with
⁶ *mezzo avere* ⁷ *rapire* =

her — Why dost thou not answer thou wicked man? — Either
 = *reo*

my wife or Emma will come, and if it is agreeable to you, she
far piacere
 will introduce my friend. I shall be happy to see not only
aver piacere

her and your wife, but also your friend — From the time the
² ¹
 sun rose till night, the enemy did nothing but bombard
spuntare *bombardare*

the town — She has undoubtedly committed a grievous fault,
 nevertheless he forgave her — It is true she has always shewn
 an affection for you, but for all that, you must be cautious

² ¹
 not to trust too much to her, because you would not be the
a

first she has deceived — Mrs. Craufurd asked your son if he

knew any of the sufferers in the last inundation at Florence,
danneggiato
 and he answered « but too well » because he had been one
 of them.

LESSON XXIV.

CONJUNCTIONS GOVERNING THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Quantunque	} <i>Although</i>	Ameno che	} <i>Except</i> <i>Unless</i>
Sebbene		Non che	
Benchè		Con patto che	} <i>On condition</i> <i>that</i>
Tuttochè		A condizione	
Ancorchè		che	
Prima che	} <i>Before</i> <i>Sooner than</i>	Per tema che	<i>For fear that</i>
Senza che		Purchè	} <i>Provided</i> <i>If</i> <i>Whenever</i> <i>When</i>
Affinchè	} <i>That</i> <i>In order that</i>	Qualora	
Chè		Quando	
Onde		Dove	
Perchè		Ove	
Acciocchè	<i>To the end that</i>	Dopo che	<i>After</i>
Se	} <i>If</i> <i>Whether</i>	Subito che	} <i>As soon as</i>
Non ostante		Tosto che	
che	<i>Notwithstanding</i>	Finchè	<i>Till, Until</i>
In caso che	<i>In case that</i>	Posto che	<i>Supposing</i>
		Dato che	<i>Put the case</i>

When the above conjunctions are found in English with the present tense, either of the Indicative, or Subjunctive Mood, we invariably make use of the present of the Subjunctive: and when they are united with a past tense or the Conditional, the Imperfect of the Subjunctive is always used.

EXAMPLES.

Although she <i>lives</i> in that mean looking house, she is very rich.	<i>Quantunque stia in quella casa, essa è ricchissima.</i>
They will stay at Leghorn, until Mrs. Lloyd <i>has taken</i> twenty sea baths.	<i>Resteranno a Livorno, finchè la Signora Lloyd abbia preso venti bagni di mare.</i>
Although he <i>was</i> ill, he would continue his journey.	<i>Tuttochè fosse malato, volle continuare il suo viaggio.</i>
They could not have reached Dublin, unless the wind <i>had changed</i> .	<i>Non sarebbero potuti arrivare a Dublino, a meno che il vento non si fosse cambiato.</i>
My niece would dine with you, on condition that you <i>would accompany</i> her to the Opera.	<i>Mia nipote pranzerebbe seco voi, con patto che l'accompagnasse all' Opera.</i>

In good authors we find *che* as a conjunction, understood after the words *innanzi*, *avanti*, *prima* and after a verb of *doubt* or *fear*.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Innanzi si conchiudesse la pace</i> (instead of <i>innanzi che....</i>)	Before the peace should be concluded.
<i>Temo mi sia nemico</i> (instead of <i>temo che...</i>)	I fear he is my enemy.

Remarks on **SE**.

Should the verb of the principal proposition be in the present or in either of the past tenses of the Indicative Mood, the verb preceded by *se* must be in the same tense of the same Mood.

EXAMPLES.

- | | |
|--|--|
| If I <i>have</i> money, I <i>know how</i> to spend it. | Se ho danari, li so spendere. |
| If you <i>had</i> come, I <i>was</i> ready to receive you. | Se venivate, era pronto ad accogliervi. |
| If I <i>went</i> to the Professor's, it <i>was</i> to reveal a doubt to him. | Se andai dal Professore, fu per manifestargli un dubbio. |

When the verb of the principal proposition is in the future tense, the verb which follows *se* may be either in the present or the future. In the present, when it would express a desire that the thing which was to happen, might happen at the moment of speaking: in the future, when it expresses futurity.

EXAMPLES.

- | | |
|---|---|
| I <i>will</i> gladly marry her, if my father <i>agrees</i> to it. | Io la sposerò volentieri, se mio padre vi acconsente. |
| If you <i>go</i> into the country, I <i>will</i> go with you. | Se andrete in campagna, verrò con voi. |

If the verb governed by *se* is united in English with a conditional tense, the former in Italian is put in the *Imperfect* simple or compound of the Subjunctive, and the latter in the Conditional simple or compound as in English — We may also translate the simple or compound Imperfect with the conjunction *se* by the Gerund.

EXAMPLES.

- | | |
|---|--|
| If I <i>were</i> rich I would buy a house. | Se fossi ricco comprerei una casa, or Essendo ricco etc. |
| I should have come if I <i>had</i> been able. | Sarei venuto se avessi potuto, or sarei venuto potendo. |

When *se* means *whether*, it takes indifferently the Subjunctive or Indicative: as, *Se ciò è or sia buono*, If that thing is good.

The three conjunctions *Dopo che*, *Subito che* and *Tosto che* take the Indicative: *a past tense*, when there is a subsequent verb that expresses a past action, and *a future*, if the subsequent verb denotes futurity.

EXAMPLES.

As soon as the king *had* arrived, a great many gifts *were* distributed. Subito che *il Re* fu arrivato, molti doni furono distribuiti.

As soon as the king *arrives*, a great many gifts *will be* distributed. Subito che *il re* arriverà, si distribuiranno molti doni.

EXERCISE 25.

Although I remembered you and wished to see you
rivedere

I
again, my occupations did not allow me to come — If I had known that he was out, I should have spared myself the
risparmiare
trouble of going to his house — I should like you to stay here
pena aver piacere
until I have finished writing this letter to Mrs. Arnould — These petitions will be presented, as soon as the Queen arrives
supplica

— We promised this morning to take some friends of our's
condurre

I
to Fiesole to-morrow, but if the weather does not change
cambiarsi
(for the better), we shall remain at home — For fear his
in meglio

repentance was not sincere, she would not trust to much to
pentimento volle

Olà	<i>Ho there, hallo</i>	Viva, Evviva	<i>Longlive, huzza</i>
Alto	<i>Halt, stop</i>	Piano	<i>Gently, softly</i>
Orsù		Cheto	
Su	} <i>Cheer up</i> <i>Up up, courage</i> <i>Be firm</i>	Silenzio	} <i>Hush, silence</i>
Via		Zitto	
Su su		Lasso	
Animo		Ahi lasso!	} <i>Poor me</i>

Lasso is declinable even as an interjection, thus *Ahi lassal Ahi lassi!* according to the gender and number of the persons, from whom the exclamation may proceed.

EXERCISE 26.

2 1

Ah pray assuage your anger and pardon me! and having
lasciare *ira*
said so, she began to weep and to repeat alas! poor me! —
When he saw his tomb, he cried « Oh tomb of the best
esclamare
of kings that ever lived!» — Ah would to heaven you had
essere *piacere (Dat.)*
never arrived! — Oh would to God you relied (on those that)
volere (Acc.) *a chi*
love you! — Alas! I have lost all I possessed and I see no-
thing but misery before me! — Gently Sir, my master is
padrone
asleep. Oh I wanted to speak to him, but I will return —
Alas! to what do I see that poor old man reduced! to beg a
piece of bread — Up, up, my dear fellow, it is late. Well! it is
amico

4 1 2

seven o'clock. Oh oh! seven o'clock! Then what o'clock
3
is it? It is eleven o'clock. Ah poor me! I ought to have been
at the General's at eight o'clock, how unfortunate I am!

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE.

Education, and the leisure which gives time for reflection,
comodità

tion, are two conditions equally necessary to man, in order to attain the complete development of his understanding,
(*Dat.*)

and the knowledge of what would constitute the happiness
(*Dat.*)

of all, if ever he should arrive at the administration of public affairs — The king of S. has sent for Mr. B. a clever
far chiamare (*Acc.*) *valente*

engineer, to construct a new rail-road; he has promised
strada ferrata

him fifty one pounds a month: Mr. A. is to follow Mr. B.
lira sterlina

but I do not know when, as travelling over mountains covered with snow is dangerous — Mrs. Monsell told Mr. James that her daughter and not his sister was allowed to go to Mrs. Boothby's ball, the latter showed the former a
fiesta di ballo

note, which he had until then concealed from her; at
biglietto

² this moment Mrs. Barrington came in to ask Mr. James for Tasso, and having heard the subject of their conversation,

⁵ ¹ ² she congratulated them upon both having been invited — According, to the taste of several travellers, the Apollo is the most beautiful statue in the Vatican, it pleases them much
Vaticano

more than the Venus of the Medici at Florence — It is said that a month ago the little town of N. was taken by the enemy, and that all the inhabitants were put to the sword;
a fil di spada

but it is not known whether it is true or not, let us hope that the whole is a fable — Her having spoken to them about it so late, prevented their going to see him before they set

out; but although they did not believe she was capable of saying what was not true, yet, less to satisfy themselves than others, they, as soon as they returned, called upon his parents — Miss Hall was told by Mr. Standish, that by setting out early in the morning, they might reach Rome in

potere

three days, passing by Sienna; she left Florence some

partire (Gen.)

weeks ago, and, from what Miss Hartwell has written to Mr. Hoppner, whom I saw this morning, it appears she was five days on the road — Her daughter presented their son with a beautiful edition of Dante bound after the English fashion, and he, in his turn, gave her a very handsome

splendido

cameo; she was charmed with the present, but her mother

regalo

said, that if he had given her a gold watch, it would have been more useful to her: the daughter blushed at her mother's remark, and immediately took leave of their friends,

osservazione

for fear that her mother should say some thing more — Those who have not learned to think, those to whom manual labour leaves no time for meditation, ought never to undertake the guidance of their fellow-citizens, by entering upon the difficult career of government.



ABBREVIATION OF WORDS.

The retrenchment of the initial vowel of a word was practised by the early Italian writers, but has long been disused. The curtailment of a word in its terminations is general and common; and seems to be required in many cases by the nature of the language.

In speaking and writing Italian, a vowel is often cut off at the end of a word, and sometimes even a consonant along with it. The practice is regulated by the following principles.

A word ending with a vowel may have that vowel curtailed, when it is preceded by one of these four liquids, *l, m, n, r.*

EXAMPLES.

L after A	M after A	N after A	R after A
Male . . . mal Fatale, fatal	Diamo . . . diam Amiamo . . . amiam	Mano . . . man Invano . . . invan	Mare . . . mar Andare . . . andar
L after E	M after E	N after E	R after E
Cielo . . . ciel Fedele . . . fedel	Diremo . . . direm Semo . . . sem (poet.)	Seno . . . sen Appieno . . . appien	Bere . . . ber Pensiere . . . pen- sier
L after I	M after I	N after I	R after I
Vile . . . vil Gentile . . . gentil	<i>With an i before m</i> <i>No retrenchment</i> <i>is made</i>	Vino . . . vin Mattino . . . mattin	Dire . . . dir Desire . . . desir
L after O	M after O	N after O	R after O
Duolo . . . duol Figliuolo . . . fi- gliuol	Uomo . . . uom	Suono . . . suon Perdono . . . per- don	Fiore . . . fior Dolore . . . dolor
L after U	M after U	N after U	R after U
<i>No curtailment</i>	<i>No curtailment</i>	Uno . . . un Alcuno . . . alcun	Pure . . . pur <i>This is the only</i> <i>word curtail-</i> <i>able</i>

EXCEPTIONS.

No curtailment can be made in the first person singular of the Indicative: therefore, although the substantive *perdono* may be curtailed, it would be wrong to say *io perdon* for *io perdono*. There is a single exception from this restriction, *io son* for *io sono*.

Nor can any curtailment of *a* be made in feminine terminations; consequently, *La Roman matrona*; *Una sol volta*, are improper; both writing and speaking require, *La Romana matrona*; *Una sola volta*.

Masculine and feminine plurals in *i*, are seldom or never curtailed, unless by poetical licence, which is tolerated rather than approved.

When a double consonant of the three liquids *l, n, r*, precedes the terminating vowel, the entire of the syllable is sometimes retrenched, as in the following words: *Caval* (lo), *fumicel* (lo), *vessil* (lo), *fanciul* (lo), *van* (no), *andran* (no), *den* (no), in poetry for *deggiono*; *pon* (no), for *possono*. *Trar* (re), *scer* (re), *scior* (re), for *traere, scegliere, sciogliere*.

But this retrenchment of an entire syllable belongs almost exclusively to poetry, with the exception of the third persons plural of verbs as, *han, dan, fan, san, avran, daran, faran, sapran*, etc. which retrenchments are allowable and common even in prose.

The plural of nouns in *lli* is also abbreviated in poetry, but in a different manner: *augelli, capelli*, for instance, being reduced to *augei, capei*.

There are four words subject to curtailment without regard to the foregoing rules; viz — *Frate*, to *Fra*, brother; *Suora*, to *Suor*, sister; (monastic appellations,) when used in conjunction with a proper name, as *fra Giovanni, suor Dorotea*; in other cases they are not curtailed; as, *Si fece frate Minore; La suora disse*; nor yet is the former when an appellative before a vowel, though the latter is; thus *frate Alberto, suor Anastasia*.

Santo, saint, (substantive masculine) to *San* before a consonant, and *Sant'* before a vowel; as, *San Francesco, Sant' Antonio*, but as an adjective, it is not abbreviated, for instance, *andarono a Roma per vedere il Santo Padre*, (the holy father).

Grande, great, (whether masculine or feminine, singular or plural,) to *gran* before a consonant; as, *gran re, gran regina, gran cose*, before a vowel it may either be contracted to *grand'* or given at full; as *grand' ingiuria* or *grande ingiuria*: *grand'uomo*, or *grande uomo*, before an initial *e*, it will naturally be contracted, *grand'eroe*.

Some other words are also contracted; as, *vo'* from *voglio*; *po'* from *poco*, *fè* both from *fece* and *sede*; *diè* from *diede*; *piè*, from *piede*.

In the rapidity of pronunciation, a vowel at the end of a word will often be suppressed before another vowel, and many elisions of this kind are met with, which come under no rule, being wholly arbitrary, and considered merely as a licence of orthography, such as, *potrebb'essere, cent'altri, sett'anni, poc'anzi, onest'uomo*.

The plural articles *dei, ai, dai* are contracted to *de', a', da'*, whenever expedient, to avoid cacaphony or bad sound; such, for instance; as, *dei rei, dei tuoi, dai suoi*; at which the ear would revolt, and therefore requires *de' rei, de' tuoi, da' suoi*, instead, and so in a numberless variety of instances sufficiently perceptible, though less strong.

By the same rule the plural article when in composition is contracted to *co', ne', pe', su'*, from *coi, nei, pei, sui*.

Two general restrictions of the licence of abbreviation are, that it cannot take place in words ending in a vowel which is accented, nor yet in any word before an *s impura*, if elision would make such word end in a consonant,

by reason of the harshness which that would produce, as will be perceptible in *gentil spirito, far studio, fanciul scostumato, stan stretti, San Stefano, gran scoglio*, instead of which we must say, at full length, *gentile spirito, fare studio, fanciullo scostumato, stanno stretti, Santo Stefano, grande scoglio*. — If, however, the curtailment will cause the word to end in a vowel, it may be made even before *s impura*; as, *egli è un po' stupido: non vo' studiare*.

The elision of the vowel in articles, in *che* and its compounds; and in monosyllable pronouns, before another vowel, is considered as a mode of orthography, rather than an exception to the former of these restrictions.

The contraction of a word is moreover admissible only when a stress or pause does not rest upon such word, but passes over to the next, as in *Signor Giovanni; sentir dolore; parlar chiaro; uom d'onore*; and the same in *amor lascivo; gran palazzo; direm così; andiam presto*: so that an inversion of the words would preclude the contraction, and make them necessarily become *lascivo amore; palazzo grande; così diremo; presto andiamo*.

In poetry nevertheless, this rule of restriction is infringed by contractions at the end of a verse and of a hemistich:

Sogna il guerrier le schiere,
Le selve il cacciator.

METASTASIO.

Non ne conobbi alcun, ma io m' accorsi
Che dal collo a ciascun pendea una tasca.

DANTE.

Così all'egro fanciul porgiamo aspersi
Di soave licor gli orli del vaso.

TASSO.

It is to be observed that the curtailment of more than a vowel, as in *fanciul*, though permitted in the pause of the hemistich, is never made at the end of a phrase.

Nor will every word terminating in one of the requisite liquids and a vowel bear curtailment, for very many would be thereby rendered extremely harsh; for instance, *vero*, when a substantive, is curtailable, but not when an adjective; thus we have, *non è ver che sia la morte il peggior di tutti i mali*, but we could not endure, *questo è un ver Cristiano*, for *vero Cristiano*.

Thus again, *nero, zero, amaro* and others, cannot be curtailed without offence to a delicate ear.

We may remark, in conclusion, that two out of the three classes of words by which Italian prosody is distinguished (*parola tronca, parola piana, parola sdrucchiola*) have a change in their prosodaic nature effected by any of these abbreviations.

The first sort, *parola tronca*, is accented on the last syllable, as *mercè, pietà*.

The second sort, *parola piana*, has the accent on the penult or last syllable but one, as *pane*, *gentile*.

The third sort, *parola sdrucciola*, has the accent on the antepenult or last syllable but two, as *amano*, *simile*.

Now by any curtailment of the termination, the *parola piana* becomes *tronca*, as in *pan*, *gentil*, because the accent then rests on the last syllable; and the *parola sdrucciola* becomes *piana*; as in *aman*, *simil*, because the accent then rests on the last syllable but one.

POETICAL LICENCES.

Abbo	for <i>Ho</i>	I have
Accólo	<i>Accoglilo</i>	Receive him
Aer	<i>Aere</i>	Air
Aggio, aggi, aggia, aggate	<i>Ho, abbi, abbia, abbiate</i>	I have, have thou, let him have, have you
Aggiungéno	<i>Aggiungevano</i>	They added
Aggrata	<i>Aggrada</i>	It gratifies
Agno	<i>Agnello</i>	Lamb
Aia	<i>Abbia</i>	He may have
Allotta	<i>Allora</i>	Then
Alma	<i>Anima</i>	The soul
Amóe	<i>Amò</i>	He loved
Andaro, andar, andarno	<i>Andarono</i>	They went
Andi	<i>Vada</i>	Thou mayst go
Andi	<i>Vai</i>	Thou goest
Andianne	<i>Andiamocene</i>	Let us go away
Ange	<i>Affligge</i>	He afflicts
Angere	<i>Affliggere</i>	To afflict
Angue	<i>Serpente</i>	Serpent
Ante, anti	<i>Avanti</i>	Before
Appo	<i>Appresso</i>	Near to
Approcciare	<i>Appressare</i>	To approach
Arrógere	<i>Aggiungere</i>	To add
Arrósi	<i>Aggiunsi</i>	I added
Aróso	<i>Aggiunto</i>	Added
Augéi	<i>Augelli</i>	Birds
Aùsi	<i>Avvezzi</i>	Accustomed
Auso	<i>Ardito</i>	Dared
Ave	<i>Ha</i>	He has
Avéi	<i>Avevi</i>	Thou hadst

Ave'	for <i>Aveva</i>	He had
Avém	<i>Abbiamo</i>	We have
Avén	<i>Avevano</i>	They had
Avéno	<i>Avevano</i>	They had
Avría	<i>Avrebbe</i>	He should have
Battéo	<i>Battè</i>	He beat
Bea	<i>Beve</i>	Let him drink
Beé	<i>Bevette</i>	He drank
Bee	<i>Beve</i>	He drinks
Begli, bei	<i>Belli</i>	Fair, beautiful
Ca	<i>Casa</i>	House
Cadéo'	<i>Cadde</i>	He fell
Caggio, Caggia	<i>Cado, Cada</i>	I fall, that he may fall
Caggiamo	<i>Cadiamo</i>	We fall
Cano	<i>Canuto</i>	Old
Cansare	<i>Discostare</i>	To retire from
Capéa	<i>Capiva, or conteneva</i>	He contained
Capegli or capei	<i>Capelli</i>	Hairs
Carco	<i>Carico</i>	Charged
Carme	<i>Verso</i>	Verse
Carón	<i>Caronte</i>	Charon
Catto	<i>Preso</i>	Taken
Cavái	<i>Cavalli</i>	Horses
Cávo	<i>Cavato</i>	Taken off
Cavói	<i>Cavolli</i>	He took them away
Céle	<i>Cela</i>	He hides or conceals
Célan	<i>Celano</i>	They hide
Cel'han (mandato)	<i>Cel'hanno (mandato)</i>	They have sent it to us
Cen	<i>Ce ne</i>	To us of it
Chè	<i>Perchè</i>	Because
Chére	<i>Chiede</i>	He demands
China	<i>Chinata</i>	A bending down
Chino	<i>Chinato</i>	Bent down
Cive	<i>Cittadino</i>	Citizen
Co	<i>Capo</i>	End
Cola	<i>Venera</i>	He venerates
Colo	<i>Venero</i>	I venerate
Coltéi	<i>Coltelli</i>	Knives
Com', como	<i>Come</i>	As
Concípio	<i>Concepisco</i>	I conceive
Confáce	<i>Conviene</i>	It is necessary
Convenétte	<i>Convenne</i>	It was necessary
Cór or córe	<i>Cogliere</i>	To gather

Corréin	for <i>Coglieremo</i>	We shall gather
Costár or costáro	<i>Costarono</i>	They cost
Crederia	<i>Crederebbe</i>	He should believe
Déa	<i>Dia</i>	He may give
Déano	<i>Diano</i>	They may give
Débbia or deggia	<i>Debba</i>	He may owe
Deggiámo	<i>Dobbiamo</i>	We may owe
Deggio or déo	<i>Devo</i>	I owe
Deggi	<i>Devi</i>	Thou owest
De' or dè	<i>Deve</i>	He owes
Den, dénno, dienno, deggiono déono	<i>Debbono</i>	They owe
Dicéstù ?	<i>Dicesti tu ?</i>	Saidst thou ?
Die	<i>Dì or giorno</i>	Day
Dièmi	<i>Mi diede</i>	He gave to me
Diéro or dièr	<i>Diedero</i>	They gave
Diéronsi	<i>Si diedero</i>	They gave or applied them- selves to
Diè	<i>Diede</i>	He gave
Differto	<i>Differito</i>	Deferred
Do'	<i>Dove</i>	Where
Domo	<i>Domato</i>	Tamed
Dovemo	<i>Dobbiamo</i>	We owe
Ee	<i>È</i>	He is
E' or ei	<i>Egli, or eglino</i>	He, they
E' l	<i>Ed il</i>	And the
Ello, Elli	<i>Egli, eglino</i>	He, they
Elicere	<i>Cavare, Estrarre</i>	To draw
Empio	<i>Emplì</i>	He filled
En, enno	<i>Sono</i>	They are
Eo	<i>Io</i>	I
Esse	<i>Essere</i>	To be
Essi	<i>Si è</i>	It is
Esto Esti, Esta Este	<i>Questo questi, questa queste</i>	This, these
Esterefatto	<i>Spaventato</i>	Frightened
Facéan	<i>Facevano</i>	They did do
Face	<i>Fa</i>	He does or makes
Falle	<i>Fallisce</i>	He deceives
Fè	<i>Fede</i>	Faith
Fe'	<i>Fece</i>	He did or made
Féa	<i>Faceva</i>	He did or made
Feda	<i>Sozza</i>	Dirty

Féi	for <i>Feci</i>	I did <i>or</i> made
Félli	<i>Li fece</i>	He made them
Fémmo	<i>Facemmo</i>	We made
Fénne	<i>Ne fece</i>	He made some, <i>or</i> of it, of them etc.
Féo	<i>Fece</i>	He made
Féra	<i>Fiera, ferisca</i>	Beast, he may strike
Férci	<i>Ci fecero</i>	They made us
Fér, <i>or</i> féro	<i>Fecero</i>	They made
Férrere	<i>Ferire</i>	To strike
Fermo	<i>Fermato</i>	Stopped
Férno	<i>Fecero</i>	They made
Férono	<i>Feriscono</i>	They strike
Fero	<i>Ferisco</i>	I strike
Fero	<i>Fiero</i>	Cruel
Ferute	<i>Ferite</i>	Wounds
Fésse, féssero	<i>Facesse, facessero</i>	He might make, they might make
Fésse	<i>Tagliò</i>	He cut off
Fían <i>or</i> fieno	<i>Saranno</i>	They will be
Fiata	<i>Volta</i>	Time
Fie <i>or</i> fia	<i>Sarà</i>	He shall be
Fieda <i>or</i> Fieggia	<i>Ferisca</i>	That he may strike
Fiédere	<i>Ferire</i>	To strike
Fiede	<i>Ferisce</i>	He strikes
Fiédo	<i>Ferisco</i>	I strike
Fiédono	<i>Feriscono</i>	They strike
Fiérere	<i>Ferire</i>	To strike
Fiére	<i>Ferisce</i>	He strikes
Fiérono	<i>Feriscono</i>	They strike
Fieti	<i>Ti sarà</i>	He shall be to thee
Fiotto	<i>Flutto</i>	The wave
Fóra	<i>Sarebbe</i>	He should be
Fóran	<i>Sarebbero</i>	They should be
Fóro	<i>Furono</i>	They were
Fóssino	<i>Fossero</i>	They were <i>or</i> might be
Fra	<i>Frate</i>	A brother <i>or</i> friar
Frene	<i>Frena</i>	He represses
Fue	<i>Fu</i>	He was
Furo	<i>Furono and ladro</i>	They were; robber
Fusse	<i>Fosse</i>	He might be
Gaude	<i>Gode</i>	He enjoys
Géna	<i>Guancia</i>	Cheek

Gia	for <i>Andava</i>	He did go
Giacea, giacéan	<i>Giaceva, giacevano</i>	Helies down, they lie down
Gimo	<i>Andiamo</i>	We go
Gimmo	<i>Andammo</i>	We went
Gir or giro	<i>Andarono</i>	They went
Girò, girai	<i>Andrò, andrai</i>	I shall go; thou shalt go
Gite	<i>Andate</i>	You go
Giuso	<i>Giù</i>	Below, Down
Giva	<i>Andava</i>	I, or he did go
Guata	<i>Guarda</i>	He looks
Haia	<i>Tu abbia</i>	Thou may'st have
Halle	<i>Le ha</i>	He has them
Halmi (<i>detto</i>)	<i>Me l'ha</i> (<i>detto</i>)	He has told it to me
Havvi	<i>Vi ha</i> or <i>vi è</i>	There is
Aréi	<i>Avrei</i>	I should have
Hölle	<i>Le ho</i>	I have them
Honne	<i>Ne ho</i>	I have some or of it
I'	<i>Io</i>	I
In lo	<i>Nello</i>	In the
Iasúso	<i>Insù</i>	About
Ir	<i>Andare</i>	To go
Ita	<i>Sì</i>	Yes
Ite	<i>Andate</i>	Go you
Ivan	<i>Andavano</i>	They went
Labbia	<i>Viso</i>	Face
Là ve	<i>Là dove</i>	There where
Lece	<i>Lice</i>	It is permitted
Leggiavam	<i>Leggevamo</i>	We did read
Len'	<i>Gliene</i>	To him, or to her of it
Lettre	<i>Lettere</i>	Letters
Letáne	<i>Litanie</i>	Prayers
Levórsi	<i>Levaronsi</i>	They got up
Lici	<i>Lì</i>	There
Licito	<i>Lecito</i>	Permitted
Linci	<i>Di quindi</i>	From where
Lodar, or lodáro	<i>Lodarono</i>	They praised
Lome	<i>Lume</i>	Light
Lúcere	<i>Rilucere</i>	To shine
Lunge	<i>Lontano</i>	Far
Maggio	<i>Maggiore</i>	Greater
Me'	<i>Meglio</i>	Better
Medemo or medesmo	<i>Medesimo</i>	The same
Men'	<i>Mene</i>	Me some or of it

Men	for <i>Meno</i>	Less
Menrénti	<i>Ti meneremo</i>	We will conduct thee
Merrò	<i>Condurrò</i>	I will conduct
Merigge	<i>Mezzo giorno</i>	Mid-day, noon
Misso	<i>Messo</i>	Put
Mo	<i>Ora</i>	Now
Mòlcere	<i>Addolcire</i>	To assuage
Morròe	<i>Morrò</i>	I shall die
Morio	<i>Morì</i>	He died
Namorado	<i>Innamorato</i>	Enamoured or in love
Nanti, or nanzi	<i>Innanzi</i>	Before
Ned	<i>Nè</i>	Nor
Ne 'l	<i>Nè il</i>	Neither the
Nòi	<i>Annoi</i>	Thou tirest
Nosco	<i>Con noi</i>	With us
Nui	<i>Noi</i>	We, us
Omai	<i>Oramai</i>	Now, For the future
Onrato	<i>Onorato</i>	Honoured
Or	<i>Ora, Oro</i>	Now, Gold
Orranza	<i>Onoranza</i>	Esteem
Orrevole	<i>Onorevole</i>	Honourable
Ov'	<i>Dove</i>	Where
Par	<i>Pare</i>	It seems
Partío	<i>Partì</i>	He went away
Páve	<i>Paventa</i>	He fears
Pentuto	<i>Pentito</i>	Repented
Piè	<i>Piede</i>	A foot
Ponno	<i>Possono</i>	They can
Potria	<i>Potrebbe</i>	He should be able
Por	<i>Porre</i>	To put
Preco	<i>Preghierà</i>	Prayer
Preco	<i>Io prego</i>	I pray
Prence	<i>Principe</i>	Prince
Puone	<i>Può</i>	He can
Puote or puole	<i>Può</i>	He can
Qua'	<i>Quali</i>	Which
Quai	<i>Quali</i>	Which
Que'	<i>Quelli</i>	Those
Quia	<i>Perchè</i>	For, because
Quinci	<i>Qui</i>	Here
Rapìo	<i>Rapì</i>	He ravished
Reina	<i>Regina</i>	Queen
Retro	<i>Dietro</i>	After

Riède	for <i>Ritorna</i>	He returns
Ritór	<i>Ritogliere</i>	To resume
Roggio	<i>Rosso</i>	Red
Rompre	<i>Rompere</i>	To break
Róppe	<i>Ruppe</i>	He broke
Sàllo	<i>Lo sa</i>	He knows it
Salsi	<i>Salit</i>	I went up
Salse	<i>Salì</i>	He went up
Satti	<i>Ti sa</i>	Dost thou recollect
Se'	<i>Sei</i>	Thou art
Sem, Semo	<i>Siamo</i>	We are
Séte	<i>Siete</i>	You are
Sèl	<i>Se lo</i>	To himself it
Solvere	<i>Slegare</i>	To loosen
Soluto	<i>Slegato</i>	Loosened
Speglio	<i>Specchio</i>	Looking-glass
Spene, or speme	<i>Speranza</i>	Hope
Spirto	<i>Spirito</i>	A spirit
Sta	<i>Questa</i>	This
Ste'	<i>Stette</i>	He stood
Stingue	<i>Estingue</i>	He extinguishes
S' tu	<i>Se tu</i>	If thou
Sui	<i>Suoi</i>	His, her, her's, its
Summo	<i>Sommo</i>	Great
Suggere	<i>Sorgere</i>	To rise
Sursi	<i>Sorsi</i>	I rose
Surto	<i>Sorto</i>	Risen
Suso, sue	<i>Su</i>	About
Tai	<i>Tali</i>	Such
Te'	<i>Tieni</i>	Hold thou
Tiénlo	<i>Tienilo</i>	Hold thou it
Terràllo	<i>Lo terrà</i>	He will hold it
Tommi	<i>Togliami</i>	Take me away
Tange	<i>Tocca</i>	It touches
Tomi	<i>Scenda</i>	He may descend
Tosta	<i>Pronta</i>	Speedy, Immediate
Trade	<i>Tradisce</i>	He betrays
U' or 've	<i>Dove</i>	Where
Udil	<i>Lo udì</i>	He heard him, or it
Unqua	<i>Mai</i>	Ever
Uscién	<i>Uscivano</i>	They did go out
Valso	<i>Valuto</i>	Been worth
Ve' or vei	<i>Vedi</i>	See thou

Veglio	for <i>Vecchio</i>	An old man .
Vegna, Vegne	<i>Venga</i>	He may come
Vel	<i>O, or velo</i>	Or, or veil
Vèlle	<i>Volere</i>	To be willing
Vèlle	<i>Vedile</i>	See thou them
Velli	<i>Vedili</i>	See thou them
Vello	<i>Eccolo</i>	There he is
Ven	<i>Vene</i>	You some <i>or</i> of it
Venésse	<i>Venisse</i>	He might come
Ver	<i>Verso</i>	Towards
Vincia	<i>Vinceva</i>	He conquered
Vincia	<i>Circondava</i>	It surrounded
Vittrice	<i>Vincitrice</i>	Conqueror
Vivém, Vivémo	<i>Viviamo</i>	We live
Vo'	<i>Voglio</i>	I will
Vólto	<i>Voltato</i>	Turned
Volse	<i>Volle</i>	He wished
Vosco	<i>Con voi</i>	With you
Volvere	<i>Volgere</i>	To turn
Vui	<i>Voi</i>	You
Vuoli or vuogli	<i>Vuoi</i>	Wilt thou

Observe that the third persons plural of the preterite past terminating in *arono*; as, *legarono*, *amarono* etc. are to have their poetical terminations in *aro*: thus they say *legaro*, *amaro* etc.

The poets always retrench an *l* from the articles *dello*, *della*, *delli*, *delle*; *alli*, *alle* etc. and from *nella*, *nelli*, *nelle*: *colla*, *colle*: hence they put *de lo*, *de la*, *de li* etc. *ne la*, *ne li*; *co la*, *co le* etc.

They likewise use *il* before verbs instead of *lo*; as *il vedo* for *lo vedo*; *il diceva* for *lo diceva*.

Remember also that the poets more frequently use the verbs in *gio*, than those in *do*, when they have two terminations; thus they write *veggio* oftener than *vedo*; *veggendo* more usually than *vedendo*.

ADDITION OF A LETTER TO WORDS.

By an opposite licence, a vowel is sometimes added to words, but this licence is very confined

When a word ending in a consonant, as *per*, *con*, *in*, *non* etc. is followed by one beginning with an *s impura*, an *i* may be prefixed to the latter for the sake of softening the sound, and thus instead of *con stento*, *in strada*, *per sbaglio*, *non scorgo*, it is more elegant to say, *con istento*, *in istrada*, *per isbaglio*, *non iscorgo*.

When the vowels, *a, e, o* are immediately followed by a word beginning with a vowel, a *d* is commonly joined to them, in order to prevent the hiatus that would arise from such concurrence of vowels; for instance *ad amarsi, ed essere, od onore*.

ACCENTS.

In writing Italian the following marks or accents are used.

L'accento acuto, (') the acute accent, is placed over a vowel in words whose meaning varies with a difference of accentuation, which falls upon that vowel when marked; as *Balia*, power, to distinguish it from *Balia*, nurse.

L'accento grave (`) the grave accent is placed upon the terminating vowel of every polysyllable word when that vowel is accented in pronunciation; as, *Carità, mercè, però, virtù*.

It is accordingly used in the parts of verbs so accented, viz. in the third person singular of the preterite, and first and third persons singular of the future Indicative; as, *parlò, temè, sentì; parlerò, parlerà; temerò, temerà; sentirò, sentirà*.

Monosyllables consisting of two vowels, which make a diphthong, take this accent over the last vowel, as, *già, piè, ciò, giù*.

It is also taken by monosyllables having a single vowel, to discriminate the sense in which they are then employed from a different sense which they bear without the accent.

È	(verb)	Is	from E	(conj.)	And
Chè	(conj.)	Because	Che	(pron.)	That
Di	{ (subst.)	Day	Di	(prep.)	Of
	(verb)	Tell			
Sè	(pron.)	Him	Se	(conj.)	If
Si	{ (adv.)	Yes	Si	(pron.)	Him
	(conj.)	So			
Là	{		La	(art.) or (pr.)	The
Li	(Adv.)	There			Her. It.
			Li	(pron.)	Them
Nè	(conj.)	Nor	Ne	(pron.)	Us

La dieresi, (") dieresis, has been adopted to distinguish those words in which *ie* and *io* are separate syllables, from other words in which those two vowels are blended into a diphthong; as, *Conveniente, furioso, oriente, punizione*.

These three different accents or marks do not prescribe any variety of pronunciation.

L'apostrofe, (`) the apostrophe, is a mark of contraction common in all the modern European languages to denote the elision of a vowel. Its employment in Italian, which is chiefly with the article, has been already rendered familiar.

DIFFERENT FORMS OF CONCLUDING LETTERS. (1)

Più non mi resta a desiderare, se terrete per fermo che io non sono secondo tra coloro che hanno per voi la più decisa stima e la più sentita venerazione. Sono

Di Firenze il 15 di settembre 1843

Il Vostro

N. N.

Continuatemi la vostra amicizia, e siatevi certo che moltissimo l'apprezzo, perchè carissima oltre ogni dire al

Vostro Tenero

N. N.

Non posso lusingarmi che la riconoscenza mia possa uguagliare mai la bontà vostra; ma siate persuaso ch'essa sarà eterna quanto l'affezione colla quale mi protesto

Tutto Vostro

N. N.

Vogliate andar persuaso che la vostra amicizia è un'idea necessaria alla contentezza della vita del

Vostro Tenero

N. N.

Le prove di affezione che da voi ricevo mi sono ben care, e mi è grato il potervi rinnovare l'attestato della mia deferenza, mentre mi confermo

Tutto Vostro

N. N.

Nulla mi resta a desiderare, se vi degnate accogliere l'espressione dell'affetto con quella sincerità con che ve l'offre chi gode ripetersi

L'Affezionatissimo Vostro

N. N.

Mi auguro che in voi sia tanta disposizione a comandarmi, quanta io ne ho per servirvi, e qui passo a protestarmi

Tutto Vostro

N. N.

Siate voi lungamente e costantemente felice, come io sono, e sarò sempre

Tutto Vostro

N. N.

(1) Observe that the Italians put the date at the end of the letter, as may be seen in the first of these conclusions.

Vi saprò grado di ogni officio praticato in questo proposito, come di favore compartito a me, che sono e sarò sempre con tutto l'animo

Il Vostro

N. N.

Ella mi abbia sempre per quello che sono veracemente, e qui col più profondo ossequio m'inchino, e nella protezione mi raccomando

Dell' Eccellenza Vostra

Rispettosissimo Servitore

N. N.

Godo di aver quest'occasione per richiamare alla memoria vostra quegli antichi e costanti segni di osservanza, e di stima, con che sono veracemente

N. N.

Spero che per dissentire da voi in ciò non vorrete dissentire dall'animo, ch'è per voi tutta stima, osservanza, e propensione la più sincera ed affettuosa. Vale

N. N.

Io poi non so come ricambiare tanta bontà, e sol mi resta la lusinga ch'Ella voglia onorarmi de' pregiati Suoi comandi, onde per tal modo possa comprovarle col fatto ch'io sono, e sarò sempre

L'Umilissimo Suo Servitore

N. N.

Tenete per fermo che non v'ha cosa di cui sì altamente mi compiaccia, quanto dell'addimostrarmi

Vostro Affezionatissimo

N. N.

La continuazione delle vostre bontà, Signora, farà sempre la gloria e la felicità del

Vostro Umilissimo Servitóre

N. N.

Addio, mio caro Giovanni, procuratemi sovente l'occasione di provarvi che voi non avete miglior amico del

Vostro Tenero

N. N.

Venite dunque ch'io vi attendo con tutta la impazienza che può ispirare la perfetta amicizia che conserverà sempre per voi

Il Vostro

N. N.

Non havvi distanza cui l'amicizia non avvicini, e da vicino come da lontano la mia sarà sempre per voi tenera quanto sincera

Il Vostro

N. N.

Il vostro destino è di farvi ammirare ovunque vi trovate; il mio è di amarvi sempre con una tenerezza senza pari. Addio

Il Vostro

N. N.

Io conto assai sulla vostra amicizia, per non temere che mi rifiutate questa grazia, cioè giudico dal cuor vostro secondo quello del vostro sincero, e tenero amico

N. N.

Ditemi francamente ciò che posso fare per voi, mia F: tutto quello che si può sperare dal più affezionato cuore, voi avete diritto d'aspettarlo dal

Vostro Sincero

N. N.

Se il divider gli affanni voi credete che possano addolcirsi, confidateli a me, nessuno può esservi più disposto dell'

Affezionatissimo Vostro

N. N.

Stiamo immobili nel desiderare il bene e nell'amarci, nè.... nè.... cel possono impedire. Amiamoci, io vi amo, e vi amerò sempre. Addio

Il Vostro

N. N.

Se altro accadrà il comune nostro Amico N. vi farà avvisato, e quando anche altro non accadesse, ad ogni modo desidererà sempre di farvi cosa utile e grata

Il Vostro

N. N.

Amatemi secondochè io vi amo ch'è sommamente. Addio

Il Vostro

N. N.

Non crediate, mia cara N., di fare un ingrato a forza di amarvi, perchè il più dolce mio piacere sarà sempre il contraccambiarvi colla più dolce tenerezza. Sono

Il Vostro

N. N.

Più vi conosco, più vi stimo, e più mi glorio d'essere

Il Vostro

N. N.

Salutate per me i vostri, scrivetemi presto, ed amatemi siccome vi amo, cioè senza fine. Addio.

Il Vostro

N. N.

Tenetemi fra' vostri cari, ch'io v'ho fra' carissimi. Addio

L' Affezionatissimo Vostro

N. N.

Non mi ringraziate, mia cara M.: io all'opposto sono a voi obbligato ogni qual volta mi procurate l'occasione di provarvi che la mia amicizia è per voi tenera quanto sincera. Addio

Il Vostro

N. N.

Addio, mia cara Madre, io vi amo quanto posso, perchè ell'è impossibile cosa l'amarvi quanto meritate.

La Vostra Affezionatissima Figlia
N. N.

Se prima non vi ho scritto, voi ne sapete la cagione: e già senza pure ch'io vi scriva, sapete come sempre sediate in cima de' miei pensieri—Addio

Il Vostro Tenero
N. N.

ADDRESSES OF LETTERS

To a Cardinal

To an Archbishop or Bishop

*A Sua Eminenza Rev^{ma}.
Il Cardinale N.*

*All' Ill^{mo}. e Rev^{mo}. Monsig^{re}.
Arcivescovo or Vescovo di N.*

To a Canon

To a Priest

*Al Molto Illustre e Rev^{do}. Sig^{re}.
Il Sig. Canonico N. N.*

*Al molto Rev^{do}. Signore
Il Sig^{re} Abate N. N.*

To a Prince and a Duke not of Royal Blood

*A Sua Eccellenza
Il Principe N.*

*A Sua Eccellenza
Il Duca N.*

To one of their brothers or children

*Al Nobil Uomo
Il Sig^{re}. E. dei Principi N.*

*Alla Nobile Donna
La Sig^{ra}. Anna dei Duchi N.*

To a Minister of State

To a Governor

*A Sua Eccellenza
Il Sig^{re}. N. N. Consigliere
di Sua Altezza I. e R. il
Duca di N.*

*All' Ill^{mo}. Sig^{re}. Pro^{re}. Col^{mo}.
Il Sig^{re}. N. N. Governatore
di N.*

To a Marquis

To an Earl

All Ill^{mo}. Signore, or
Al Nobil Uomo
Il Sig^{re}. Marchese N. N.

All Ill^{mo}. Signore, or
Al Nobil Uomo
Il Sig^{re}. Conte N. N.

To one of their brothers or children

Al Nobil Uomo
Il Sig^{re}. P. dei Marchesi N.

Alla Nobil Donna
La Sig^{ra}. Maria dei Conti N.

To a Knight

To a Professor

Al Nobil Uomo
Il Sig^{re}. Cavaliere N. N.

Al Chiarissimo Signore
Il Sig^{re}. Professore N. N.

To a Gentleman

To a Mrs.

All' Egregio Signore
Il Sig^{re} N. N.

All' Ornatissima Signora
La Sig^{ra}. N. N.

To an Advocate

To a young Lady

All Ill^{mo}. Signore
Il Sig^{re}. Avvocato N. N.

Alla Gentile Donzella
La Sig^{ra}. N. N.

To an Artist

To a Workman

Al Meritissimo Signore
Il Sig^{re}. N. N.

Al Signor N. N.

THE END.

CONTENTS.

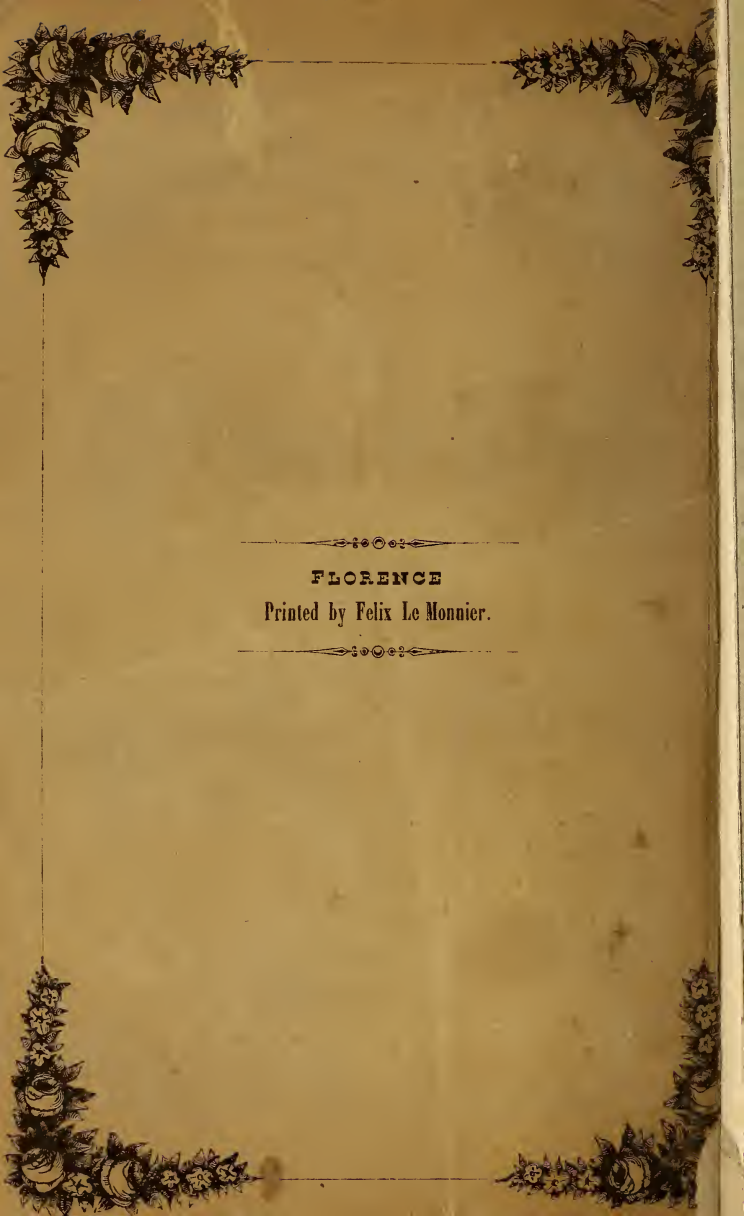
Preface	PAGE 1	Exercise 8.	PAGE 60
Italian Alphabet and Pronun-		Exercise 9.	62
ciation	3	LESSON X. — Demonstrative Pro-	
LESSON I. — Parts of Speech . .	4	nouns	63
Nouns Substantive	ibid.	Exercise 10.	67
Genders	5	LESSON XI. — Relative and In-	
Number	7	terrogative Pronouns	69
LESSON II. — Article	11	Relative	ibid.
Definite Article	ibid.	Interrogative	71
Partitive Article	16	Exercise 11	72
Indefinite Article	ibid.	LESSON XII. — Indefinite Pro-	
Marks used in the Exercises . .	18	nouns	74
Exercise 1.	ibid.	Invariable Pronouns	ibid.
LESSON III. — Adjective	20	Exercise 12	78
Exercise 2.	21	LESSON XIII. — Indefinite Pro-	
LESSON IV. — Comparatives and		nouns continued	79
Superlatives	22	Exercise 13	83
Adjectives Irregular in their		Verb	84
Comparatives and Superlatives.	26	Conjugations of the Auxiliary	
Exercise 3.	27	Verbs <i>Avere</i> and <i>Essere</i> . . .	87
LESSON V. — Cardinal and Ordi-		Inflections of the Regular Verbs.	
nal Numbers	28	First Conjugation.	90
Collective Numbers	29	Second Conjugation	91
Distributive Numbers	30	Third Conjugation 1st Class. . .	92
Exercise 4	32	Third Conjugation 2d Class. . .	93
LESSON VI. — Variable Nouns. .	33	Explanations relating to the Ta-	
Augmentatives	34	bles of Irregular Verbs. . . .	94
Diminutives	ibid.	Terminations of irregular Verbs.	97
Vilifying Nouns	35	Second Conjugation.	ibid.
Exercise 5.	ibid.	Third Conjugation.	99
LESSON VII. — Pronouns	37	Irregular Verbs of the first Conju-	
Personal and Conjunctive Pro-		gation	100
nouns	ibid.	Irregular Verbs of the Second	
Exercise 6.	46	Conjugation.	102
LESSON VIII. — Personal and		Irregular Verbs of the Third	
Conjunctive Pronouns conti-		Conjugation.	130
nued	48	LESSON XIV. — Observations on	
Compound Conjunctive Pronouns	53	<i>Would, Should, Could, Ought</i>	
Exercise 7.	54	and <i>Might</i>	143
LESSON IX. — Possessive Pro-		Agreement of the Verb with the	
nouns	55	subject	144

Indicative Mood	PAGE 145
Exercise 14	148
LESSON XV. — Subjunctive Mood.	149
Exercise 15	154
LESSON XVI. — Infinitive Mood.	155
Exercise 16	161
LESSON XVII. — Gerund and	
Participle	162
Gerund	Ibid.
Participle.	163
Participle Present	Ibid.
Participle Past.	164
Exercise 17	166
LESSON XVIII. — Of the Passive	
and the particle <i>Si</i>	167
Exercise 18	171
LESSON XIX. — Verbs taking dif-	
ferent auxiliaries	172
Intransitive Verbs conjugated with	
<i>Avere</i>	174
Intransitive Verbs conjugated with	
<i>Essere</i>	Ibid.
Impersonal Verbs conjugated with	
<i>Essere</i>	175
Intransitive Verbs conjugated with	
both <i>Essere</i> and <i>Avere</i>	Ibid.
Impersonal Verbs conjugated with	
both <i>Essere</i> and <i>Avere</i>	176
Exercise 19	Ibid.
LESSON XX. — Verbs governing	
different cases	177
Verbs always governing the <i>Ge-</i>	
<i>nitive</i>	Ibid.
Verbs always governing the <i>Da-</i>	
<i>tive</i>	179
The following take the <i>Dative</i>	
of the <i>person</i> and the <i>Ac-</i>	
<i>cusative</i> of the <i>thing</i>	180

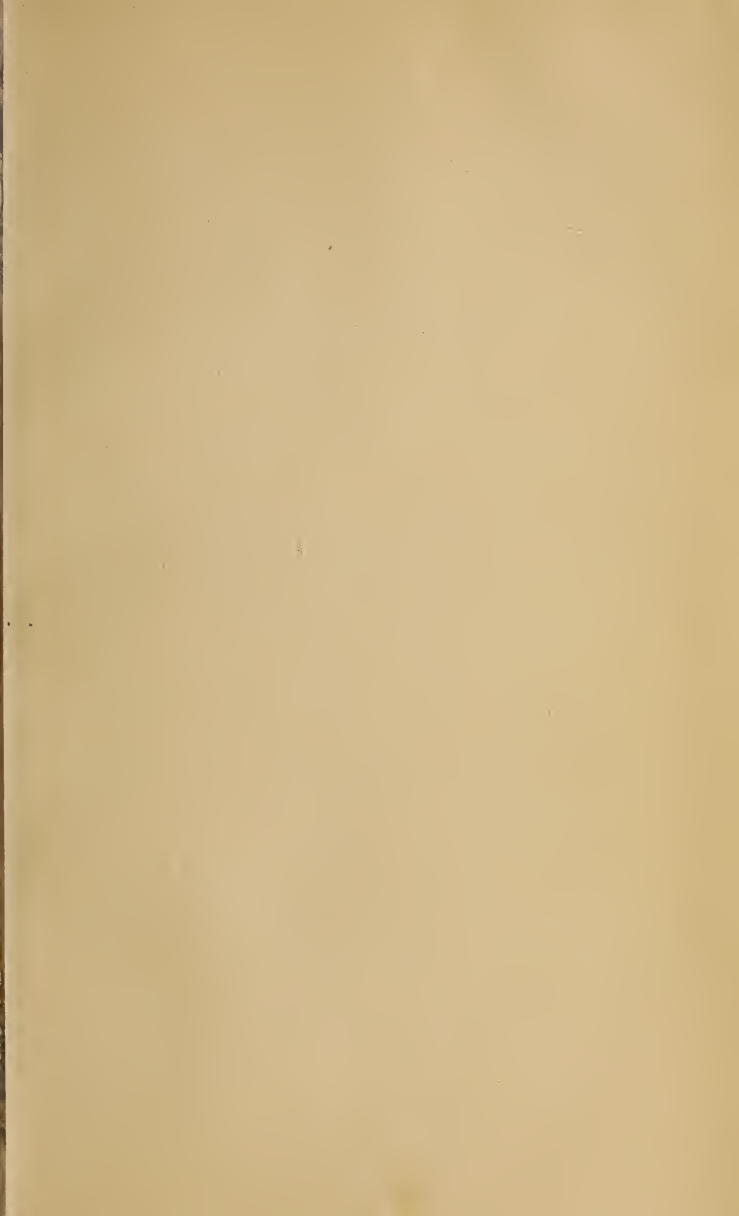
The following govern different	
cases or prepositions.	PAGE 180
Exercise 20	182
Exercise 21	183
LESSON XXI. — Adverb.	184
Adverbs and adverbial expres-	
sions	185
Adverbs denoting locality in a .	
manner corresponding with the	
three classes of demonstrative	
Pronouns	190
Exercise 22	191
LESSON XXII. — Preposition	192
Particular rules for the use	
of <i>Da</i>	Ibid.
Particular rules for the use	
of <i>Per</i>	194
Prepositions with the cases they	
govern	196
Exercise 23	197
LESSON XXIII. — Conjunction	199
Exercise 24	201
LESSON XXIV. — Conjunctions	
governing the Subjunctive	
Mood	202
Remarks on <i>Se</i>	203
Exercise 25	205
LESSON XXV. — Interjection	206
Exercise 26	207
Recapitulatory Exercise	208
Abbreviation of words	209
Exceptions.	210
Poetical Licences	213
Addition of a letter to words.	220
Accents	221
Different forms of concluding	
Letters	222
Addresses of Letters.	225

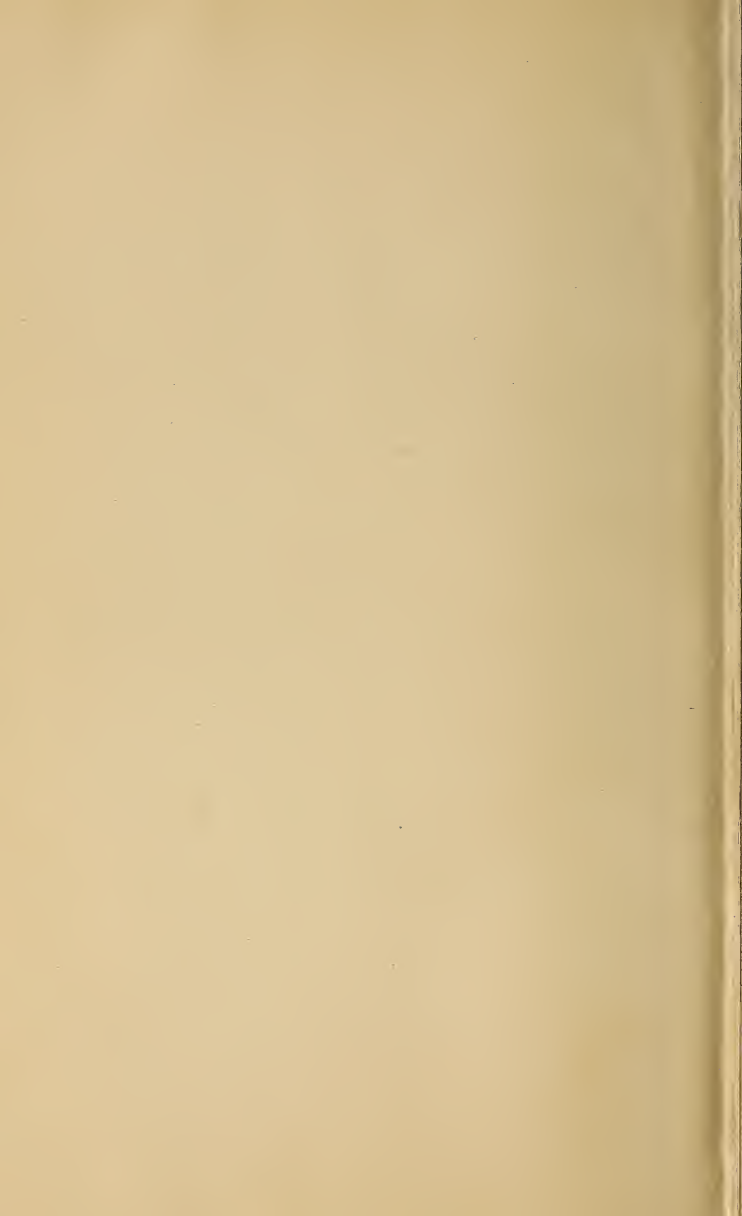






FLORENCE
Printed by Felix Le Monnier.













LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
Branch Bindery, 1902

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 022 211 951 0